

SERMONS
AND
DISCOURSES
ON SEVERAL
SUBJECTS
AND
OCCASIONS.

BY
FRANCIS ATTERBURY, D.D.
Late Lord Bishop of ROCHESTER,
and Dean of WESTMINSTER.

Published from the Originals
By *THOMAS MOORE, D. D.*
His LORDSHIP'S Chaplain.

VOL. IV.

THE THIRD EDITION.

LONDON,

Printed for T. WOODWARD in *Fleet-street*,
and C. DAVIS, against *Gray's Inn*,
Holbourn.

MDCCLXV.



THE
CONTENTS
OF THE
Fourth VOLUME.

SERMON I.
On the Martyrdom of King
Charles I.

LUKE xxiii. 28.

*Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for
me, but weep for yourselves and for
your Children.* 3

*A Day of Trouble, Rebuke, and Blas-
phemy, that derived Infamy, Misery,
and Guilt upon this Nation. pag. 3, 4*

The Text taken from one of the Les-
sons, which, according to the Course
of the Liturgy, was read to the King
just before his Martyrdom, and is
now appointed to be read on the
Day of its Commemoration. p. 4

A 2

The

CONTENTS.

The last Moments of his Life, in Imitation of our Blessed Saviour's, were employed in awakening a drowsy Nation to a Sense of its Guilt, and a Dread of its impending Punishment. 6

I. The Doctrine this Day suggests to us, are, That we misplace our Grief, if we employ it in bewailing and lamenting our martyr'd Sovereign. 7, 8

The Day on which the ancient Martyrs were *crowned*, solemnized with Joy like their Birth-days. 8

In like manner we ought to magnify the Grace of God, which inspired our Sovereign with such Virtues, as made him shine with greater Lustre in the Depth of his Sufferings, than he did in his most flourishing Circumstances. 9, 10

And raised him in his lowest State as far above the most prosperous Princes, as they themselves seem raised above the rest of Mankind.

10—13

By which he has given an Instance to profane Men, of the Power of those religious Principles, which could support him under all the Indig-

C O N T E N T S.

Indignities that befel him.	14
And reflects an Honour on that Church, at whose Breast he sucked those Principles.	14, 15
Every Consideration that heightens his Virtue, enhances the Guilt of the Instruments of his Ruin,	15, 16
II. Nations, as Nations, are liable to Guilt, and consequently to Punish- ment.	16
The Reason why this appears clearer from the Old Testament than the New.	17, 18
How this Nation is concerned in the Guilt of the Martyrdom.	18, 19
The inflaming Circumstances of its Guilt.	20, 21
Which was punished, in some Mea- sure, by its own necessary Conse- quences.	22—26
These not put to an end at the Resto- ration	27
Nor ever can be, while the Doctrines that paved the Way to this Wick- edness are embraced and cherished.	30—34
A Deprecation of God's Judgments:	34, 35

S E R M O N II.

The wicked Lives of *Christians*
no Argument against the Truth
of *Christianity*.

I T I M. vi. 1.

*That the Name of God and his Doctrine
be not blasphemed.* 39

Tho' the Purity of the Christian Mo-
rality is a Proof of its divine Ori-
ginal, yet the wicked Lives of *Chri-
stians* are urged as an Objection
against it. 39—41

I. An Enquiry into the Grounds of
this Objection : Where it may be ob-
served,

That as bad Men are under the
Christian Dispensation, they would
have been worse without it. 42

The Vices we observe among *Chri-
stians* strike the Imagination more
strongly, by reason of their Near-
ness. 43

And because they are attended with a
deeper Guilt. 44

The

CONTENTS.

vii

- The Virtues of a good *Christian* less known, because practised with a View only to another World. 44
- The Author of *The Whole Duty of Man* a remarkable Instance of this. 45
- II. Allowing the Complaint to be just, there would be no Reason to urge it to the Disadvantage of Christianity itself. 46
1. The holiest and purest Doctrine is but Doctrine still, and can only instruct and admonish, not compel. 47
- It is no more an Argument against Revealed than against Natural Religion. 48, 49
2. Christianity in its Infancy had all the Influence upon the Lives of its Professors that could be expected; and if it has not the same now, this must not be imputed to its Doctrine, but to other Reasons. 50, 51
- As 1st Because it is not embraced so much upon Principle, as formerly. 52
- 2^{dly} Because different Schemes of Religion have been invented, very different from the Purport of the Gospel. 53

CONTENTS.

3^{dly} *Christians* that reject the Means of becoming good Men, must be *naturally* worse for them, as well as *judicially* so. 58

4^{thly} It is hard to make Christianity answerable for the ill Lives of those, who do not in good earnest receive it; and harder still, that those very Men, whose Lives give Occasion for this Objection, should press it most eagerly. 59

III. The Inferences from this Discourse are,

1. The Degeneracy of *Christians* is no Argument against the Truth of Christianity, but rather a Confirmation of it, because such a Degeneracy was actually foretold by *Christ* and his Apostles. 60, 61

And because the Design of Christianity, which was to reform the World, being so remarkably defeated, it must have come to nought long ago, if it had not been from God. 62

2. From our present Degeneracy we may conclude we were once in a better State. 62, 63

3. We

CONTENTS.

ix

3. We learn from hence not to measure Persons by Doctrines, or Doctrines by Persons. 64, 65
4. The best Way to remove this Scandal taken against Christianity, is to conform our Lives to the Doctrines of it. 65—67

SERMON III.

The Fear of God a Motive to Holiness.

PHIL. ii. 12.

Work out your own Salvation with Fear and Trembling. 71

The Author of our Nature has been pleased to address himself to our Passions, as well as our Reason. 71, 72

I. Some *general* Reflections that may serve to lessen the ill Opinion scrupulous Persons entertain of their Repentance, from its being founded upon a Principle of Fear. 73

1. The Gospel presses the Necessity of Repentance in general; but is silent as to the Motive from whence it must arise. 74

2. Those

C O N T E N T S.

2. Those that think their Repentance ill grounded, because it was owing to a Principle of Fear, might as well think their Scruples ill grounded, that are owing to the very same Principle. 75, 76
3. It is no slight Token of a Man's being really good, because he suspects himself not to be so. 76—78
- II. The Fear of God's Wrath *particularly* proved to be a proper Motive to Obedience. 79
 1. Because Fear is a Passion implanted by God in our Nature, and it never answers its End so well, as when it has this Effect upon us. 79—81
 2. Because God cannot be considered as a Law-giver, without enforcing his Laws by a Sanction. 81, 82
The Hope of a Reward as much a *selfish* Principle, as the *Fear* of losing one. 82, 83
 3. The State of a profligate Sinner is such, that nothing but Terror can lay hold of him. 83—85
If this Principle has done the Work of a better, it has had its proper Effect. 88—90
Melan-

CONTENTS.

xi

Melancholy Persons persuade themselves into an Opinion that they love God less, and dread him more than they really do 90, 91

The right Use of these Apprehensions is to take Occasion from them to advance faster in the Ways of Religion. 91, 92

SERMON IV.

The Terrors of Conscience.

M A T T. xiv. 1, 2, 3.

At that Time Herod the Tetrarch heard of the Fame of Jesus, and said unto his Servants, This is John the Baptist, he is risen from the Dead, and therefore mighty Works do shew forth themselves in him. For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in Prison for Herodias sake, his Brother Philip's Wife. 95

The State of the Wicked a very restless one. 95, 96

The Wildness and Inconsistency of Herod's Imagination. 97, 98

I. The

I. The Reproaches of Conscience unavoidable, proved from Scripture. 101

From Reason. 104

And Experience. 107

A late Writer who always dreaded being in the Dark, a remarkable Instance of this Truth. 112

Tiberius, another. 115

The Tales of Ghosts and Spectres accounted for upon this Principle. 117

II. To account for the Difficulties that attend the Proof of this Proposition, it is to be observed,

1. That our Judgments often mislead us, when they are formed only upon the Outside and Surface of Men's Actions. 120

2. That the Reprehensions of Conscience are not a continued, but intermitting Disease. 121

3. The few Instances of wicked Men that go out of the World without feeling the Stings of Conscience, to be ascribed either to ill Principles early and deeply imbibed, or to an Obstinacy of Temper, or to a natural or acquired Stupidity.

124, 125
These

CONTENTS.

xiii

These only prove, that there are Monsters in the *moral*, as well as the *natural* World; but make nothing against the settled Laws of either.

125, 126

III. The Application of this Doctrine, That even for *Pleasure's* Sake we ought to abstain from all criminal Pleasures.

127

As it is a good Rule for a happy Conduct of Life, to manage our *Domestick* Concerns right, that we may be easy under our own Roof; so it is the best Way to secure *Peace* to ourselves, by having it always in our Consciences.

129

Let those chiefly listen to this Reprover, who are otherwise set in a great measure above Reproof.

130

S E R-

S E R M O N V.

St. *Paul's* Defence before *Felix*.

A C T S xxiv. 25.

*And as he reasoned of Righteousness,
Temperance, and Judgment to come
Felix trembled.* 135

The astonishing Scene of St. *Paul's*
Preaching. *Ibid.*

I. The subject Matter of it remark-
able for its Excellence and Import-
ance. 137—140

And for its Fitness and Propriety with
Regard to the Person, to whom it
was addressed. 140, 141

The Dexterity and Address of the
Apostle to be admired in the Con-
duct of it. 141, 142

His sincere and disinterested Spirit.

142, 143

And his undaunted and exemplary
Courage. 142, 144

II. The Manner of St. *Paul's* handling
his Subject, *he reasoned.* 146

A wrong

CONTENTS.

xv

- A wrong Notion frequently entertained concerning edifying Discourses. 147, 148
- III. The wonderful Effect of St. *Paul's* Reasoning, *Felix* trembled. 149
- The great Force and Efficacy of the Word of God when duly handled, shewn from this and other Instances in Scripture. 150—153
- A Reproach to our Sluggishness and Insensibility. 153
- Why St. *Paul's* Preaching had not the same good Effect on *Drusilla*, the Partner with *Felix* in his Crimes. 153, 154
- And why the good Effect on *Felix* was not more lasting. 155, 156
- An Exhortation, that the Word of God may have a better Effect on us. 156—158

S E R-

SERMON VI.

Of Glorifying in the Cross of
CHRIST.

G A L. vi. 14.

*But God forbid that I should glory, save
in the Cross of our Lord Jesus Christ,
whereby the World is crucified unto
me, and I unto the World.* 167

The Occasion of the Words of the
Text opened. 162—167

I. Whatever Excellencies, outward Advantages, or Privileges it may be our Lot to enjoy, it misbecomes us, as we are *Christians*, to glory in them. 168

This urged from the Uncertainty of Their Continuance, or of Our continuing with them. 169

From the Tendency of the Doctrines of the Christian Religion. 170

And from the Contemplation of *Christ's* Triumph on the Cross. 171—174

II. It

CONTENTS.

xvii

II. It highly becomes us to glory in the Cross of *Christ*: 174

It is the Doctrine to which all the other Doctrines of the Gospel refer, and from which they derive their Efficacy 175

The Propriety of the Church of *England's* using the Sign of the Cross in Baptism. 176, 177

III. The proper Methods of glorying in the Cross of *Christ*; 177

1. By frequently meditating on his Sufferings: 178

2. By imitating those meek Graces and Virtues that he displayed under them: 179

3. By celebrating the Memorial of his Death. 182—186

S E R M O N VI.

External Worship a fit and reasonable Duty.

P S A L. xcv. 6.

*O come let us worship, and bow down,
let us kneel before the Lord our
Maker.* 189

The Propriety of placing the Hymn,
from whence the Text is taken, at
the Entrance of our Morning Devotions. *Ibid.*

I. External Adoration shewn to be a
reasonable Duty, as it relates to God,
and is Part of that *natural Homage*,
which the *whole* Man, Soul and Body,
owes to him, on Account of his Creation
and Preservation of us. 193

As we have no way of forming an Idea
of God, but by considering the several
limited Perfections, scattered among his
Creatures; so we have no Way of applying
to him as Dependents, but by considering those
Marks

CONTENTS.

xix

Marks of Respect that are used among Men. 194, 195

External Worship mentioned as a natural Duty, in both Testaments.

197, 198

It is just we should glorify God in this Life with the Body as well as the Soul, if we expect he should glorify both in another. 199

If outward Worship is not due to God under the Gospel, the paying it to Idols cannot be highly culpable. 199, 200

II. External Worship a reasonable Duty, as it relates to *ourselves*, and is a Help towards promoting the spiritual Worship of our Souls. 200

The Emotions of the Soul are naturally communicated to the Body.

200, 201

The Body by its devout Gestures returns the Force the Soul lent it:

201—203

And by this Means makes amends, as it were for the Obstructions it gives in the Performance of many other Duties. 203, 204

- III. External Adoration a reasonable
Duty, as it relates to our *Neighbour*,
and is a Sign, by which we express
to others the religious Veneration
that dwells in us. 204
- The Advantages of publick Worship
to excite the mutual Ardour of the
Faithful, 204, 205
- And to silence the Scoffs of the Un-
believer. 205, 206
- An Exhortation to the Practice of
this Duty, from the Inconvenience
of the Neglect of it, 208
- And the Example of the Primitive
Christians. 208, 209

S E R M O N VIII.

External Worship shewn to be of
no Efficacy, unless accompa-
nied with Internal Devotion:
Together with the excellent
Contrivance of the Church of
England Service to promote
the latter.

L A M. iii. 41.

*Let us lift up our Hearts, with our
Hands, unto God in the Heavens.*

213

The Occasion of the Text opened.

213, 214

The Folly of a mere external Worship
without a suitable Affection of the
Heart shewn from the Considera-
tion,

1. Of the Divine Nature: 216

2. Of our own: 218

3. Of the great End and Design of
Prayer: 219

a 3

4. Of

- 4 Of the Blessings, which, when duly performed, it is certainly attended with. 220

✓ The great Advantages of the publick Offices of the Church of *England* to raise the Attention of all sincere Worshippers,

1. By their being drawn up in our Mother Tongue: 223
2. In their consisting of a premeditated Form of Words: 224
3. In their being divided into frequent Breaks and Pauses: 227
4. In their Variety: 228
5. In the Solemnity of them, neither so plain as not to be able to rouse, nor so gaudy as to distract the Mind. 229, &c.

CONTENTS.

xxiii

SERMON IX.

The Usefulness of Church Music; on Saint *Cecilia's* Day, 1690.

PSAL. lvii. 7, 8.

My Heart is fixed, O God, my Heart is fixed; I will sing, and give Praise. Awake up, my Glory! Awake Psaltery and Harp! I myself will awake right early. 235

David a Man after God's Heart, by qualifying his own Heart for the Duties of the Sanctuary. 235, 236

The Purport of the Text. 236, 237

I. A lively Attention of Mind the great Recommendation of our publick Devotions to God. 239

The Difference between the *Jewish* Dispensation in this particular, and the *Christian*. 240, 241

II. All pious Helps to raise our Attention, proper to be used in our publick Worship. 243

a 4

Vocal

Vocal and Instrumental Harmony
useful to this purpose ;

1. As it removes the ordinary Hindrances of our Devotion, *viz.*

The *Engagement* of Thought, which
we often bring with us into Church,
from what we last conversed with :

244

And those accidental *Distractions* that
happen to us during the Course of
the Service :

245

And lastly, that *Weariness* and Flat-
ness of Mind, which some weak
Tempers may labour under, by rea-
son of the Length of it.

246

2. It not only removes Impediments to
our Devotion, but supplies us with
Advantages towards performing it ;

By adding Solemnity to the publick
Service ;

247

And by raising in the Soul all the de-
vout Passions, that of Love particu-
larly, which wing it up to Heaven,
and fit it for the Illapses of the
Holy Spirit,

249—253

St. *John*, in whose Breast divine Love
seems to have abounded most, has
spoken the most advantageously of
Vocal and Instrumental Musick.

251
Igna-

CONTENTS.

xxv

- Ignatius* inculcates the same Lesson
after him, who probably learnt it
personally from him. 251, 252
It makes our Duty a Pleasure, and
enables us by that means to per-
form it with Vigour and Chearful-
ness. 253
This Effect remarkably visible in *Da-
vid*, 254
And several of the Christian Fathers. 255
The Inconveniences that have arisen
from Church Musick much over-
balanced by the Advantages of it. 259
III. The Way of performing Divine
Service in the *Church of England*, bet-
ter fitted to raise our *Affections*, than
any other Form of Devotion now
practised in the Christian World. 259, 260
IV. An Exhortation to make our De-
votion exemplary in proportion to
those Advantages, which we above
all others enjoy. 260—263

S E R-

SERMON X.
Of Anxiety and Solitude.

MATT. vi. 34.

Take no Thought for the Morrow. 267

The Precepts of our Saviour's Sermon
on the Mount very different from
the prevailing Opinions of the *Jews*
at that Time. 267, 268

The Duty of the Text explained, with
its proper Limitations. 269—273

I. The *Evil* of too great Anxiety
shewn,

1. As it is opposite to several plain
Precepts of Scripture; 274

2. As it is an Invasion of the peculiar
Province and Prerogative of God ;
274, 275

3. As it is built always on a secret
Distrust of God's Goodness towards
us, and perpetual Watchfulness o-
ver us: 276

Which yet very evidently appears to
us from the Light of Nature ;

277, 278

And

CONTENTS.

xxvii

And from the Observation of his Providence over the several Ranks of lower and less noble Creatures.

278—280

II. The *Folly* of too great Anxiety.

1. It makes us feel Afflictions which will never overtake us, and multiplies those which certainly will:

281—284

2. It takes away from us the Power either to *escape* or *bear* them.

285, 286

3. An anxious Concern for *Futurity* robs us of all the Ease and Advantages which might arise from a proper and discreet Use of the *present* Moment.

286

4. The *Presence* of Evils often suggests better Expedients and wiser Counsels, than all our Wisdom and Foresight can do.

287

5. By our tormenting Cares we forfeit our Interest in the divine Providence and Protection.

288, 289

An Exhortation to trust in God.

290—293

S E R-

SERMON XI.

The Wretchedness of living in a
wavering State of Mind.

GEN. xlix. 4.

Unstable as Water, thou shalt not excel.

297

The Occasion of the Words. 297, 298

I. The ill Condition of that Man, who
is distracted between two Courses of
Life, a *good* and *bad* one. 299

1. He is in the meanest State of Mind,
human Nature is capable of, inas-
much as he forfeits the Prerogative
of his Understanding, which was
designed for a Guide to him :

300

And disgraces the Image of God,
whose glorious Attribute is *Immu-
tability* :

301, 302

And lastly, makes himself lower than
the Beasts, who act regularly un-
der the Guidance of Instinct. 303

2. He is in a State of perpetual *Trou-
ble* and *Disturbance* to himself ; his
good Fits being like short Intervals
of

of Madness, which serve only to let the Madman into a Knowledge of his Disease. 303—307

3. This Temper is mischievous to a *Man* in point of *Interest*, as well as *Ease*; not only by rendering him actually unfit for the Business of Life, but suspected likewise of Hypocrisy and Diffimulation.

307—309

4. It is utterly inconsistent with the Terms of *Salvation*. 309—312

II. To persuade the Man that is thus bewildered to fix a sure Principle of *Virtue* in his Mind, that may guide and govern him *throughout*, and make him *uniformly* wise,

1. Let him be sure that his *Belief* is right, and sound at Bottom:

313—315

2. Let him consider well what that *particular Weight* was, that in the Days of his *Irresolution* still hung upon him, and clogged his virtuous Endeavours:

315, 316

3. Let him take care not to come within the Reach of any thing, that may unfasten his Resolutions, whilst

C O N T E N T S.

whilst they are yet young and tender. 316, 317

4. To these *Endeavours* let him add fervent *Prayer*, that he may be *stablished, strengthened, settled.*

317, 318

S E R M O N. XII.

The Duty of living peaceably explained and recommended, in a Farewel Sermon at Saint *Bride's*.

R O M. xii. 18.

If it be possible, as much as lieth in you, live peaceably with all Men. 321

The Importance of the Duty in the Text, and the Seasonableness of pressing it upon the present Occasion.

321, 322

- I. Wherein it consists, in relation to *Publick* and *Private Men*, *Opinions* and *Practice.* 323—327

- II. The *Extent* of it, *with all Men.*

327—329

III. The

CONTENTS.

xxxi

III. The Difficulty of practising it, intimated by these Words, *if it be possible, and as much as lieth in you.* 329

We are allowed to stand up in Defence of our *Fortune or good Name*, where *violent* Encroachments are made upon them; 330

And in Defence of the Honour of God, and the Interests of Virtue.

330, 331

But still, as War has its Rules and Restraints, within which its Cruelties are bounded; much more in these Cases ought we to have an Eye to Peace while we seem to overlook it. 331, 332

IV. The best Helps to the Practice of this Duty are,

1. To regulate our Passions: 333, 334
2. To moderate our Desires, and shorten our Designs, with regard to the good Things of Life: 334, 335
3. To have a watchful Eye upon ourselves in our first *Entrance* upon any Contest: 335, 336
4. Always to guard against the Intemperance of our *Tongue*, especially

- cially in relation to that natural
 Proneness it has towards publishing
 the Faults of others: 336, 337
5. To keep ourselves from embarking
 in Parties and Factions: 337
6. To study to be quiet, by *doing our
 own Business* in our proper Profession
 or Calling. 337, 338
7. Add Prayer to the Author of *Peace
 and Lover of Concord*, for the Fruits
 of his Spirit, which are *Love, Joy,
 Peace, &c.* 338

An Exhortation to the Practice of this
 Doctrine on the present Occasion,
viz. the Choice of a Lecturer.



339—348

ON THE
MARTYRDOM
OF
King *CHARLES I.*

Preached at
St. *ANDREW's HOLBORN.*

VOL. IV.

B



A
S E R M O N
ON THE
MARTYRDOM
OF
King CHARLES I.

LUKE xxiii. 28.

Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your Children.

THIS is a *Day of Trouble, of* SERM.
Rebuke, and Blasphemy ; di- I.
stinguished in the Annals of
our Nation, and the Calendar of our
Church, by the sad Suffering of an
B 2 excellent

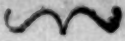
SERM. excellent Prince, who fell a Sacrifice to

I. the Rage of his Rebellious Subjects; and
 by his Fall derived Infamy, Misery,
 and Guilt on them, and their sinful
 Posterity.

We are met here, to acknowledge
 our Sin, to express our publick Detesta-
 tion of it, and to deprecate the Venge-
 ance which hath pursued, and doth
 still, I fear, pursue us on the Account
 of it. In order to raise and improve
 these good Thoughts and Dispositions,
 I have pitch'd on the Words spoken by
 our Blessed Saviour in his sad Procession
 towards *Calvary*, as the Ground of our
 present Meditations,—*Daughters of Je-
 rusalem, &c.*

Since Providence so order'd it, that
 one of the Lessons for that Day,
 whereon the Royal Martyr suffer'd,
 and which was read to him just be-
 fore his ascending the Scaffold, should
 contain an Account of the Passion of
 our Lord; and the same Lesson is still
 by Authority appointed to be read
 in these annual Assemblies; I may
 be



be allowed, I hope, from the History S E R M.
of that Passion, written by St. *Luke*, I.
to take the Words you have heard, 
and apply them to the Subject I am
now about to handle, without incur-
ring the Imputation of drawing un-
seemly Parallels, and without giving
Offence to any, but those, who are
Offended with the *Anniversary* itself,
and with our solemn and devout *Man-
ner* of observing it.

As *Jesus* went to his Crucifixion,
St. *Luke* tells us, that *there followed
him a great Company of People, and
of Women, which also bewailed and la-
mented him. But Jesus turning unto
them, said, Daughters of Jerusalem,
weep not for me, but weep for yourselves,
and for your Children: For, behold, the
Days are coming, in the which they shall
say, Blessed are the Barren, and the
Wombs that never bare, and the Paps
that never gave suck! His present Suf-
ferings, and approaching Death, with-
held him not from reflecting with Con-
cern on the Calamities, which were rea-*

S E R M. dy to overtake others on his Account.

I. And, because the Women who followed him to *Calvary*, out of a Tenderness of Nature peculiar to their Sex, indulged themselves in the loudest Expressions of Grief; therefore to *these* he particularly addresses the Admonition of the Text; directs them to turn their well meant Compassion from *him* upon *themselves*; to reserve all their Tears for a time, now at hand, when the whole Nation of the *Jews* would be called to a strict Account for spilling his Blood, and be made an astonishing Instance of Divine Vengeance.

The good Prince, whose unhappy Fate we commemorate, did in *this*, as well as *other* respects, follow the
 Heb ii. 10. Steps of *the great Captain of his Salvation, who was made perfect through Sufferings*: For the last Moments of his Life, which his Murderers allowed him, were employed in awakening a drowsy Nation into a Sense of its Guilt, and a dread of its impending Punishment. Secure of his own Innocence

nocence and Happiness, he seem'd to SERM.
 have conquer'd all Concern for him- I.
 self; and, like a true Father of his
 People, was chiefly solicitous for the
 Peace and Welfare of his People.
 His dying Words breathed nothing
 but Pity and Tenderness towards his
 Subjects who were to survive his
 Fall, and to feel the sad Effects of it.
 And therefore to *those*, who with
 weeping Eyes then beheld that bloody
 Scene, and to *us*, who with like Grief
 now look on, at a distance, may we
 suppose the Royal Sufferer (consistently
 with the Character he then maintain'd)
 to say,—*Weep not for me; but weep for yourselves, and for your Children.*

This, I am sure, is an Instruction,
 which the Day itself seems naturally
 to afford us, and which I shall, therefore,
 pursue in both its Branches; shewing
 you,

First, That we misplace our Grief, I.
 if we employ it in bewailing and
 B 4 lamenting

S E R M. lamenting our Martyr'd Sovereign ;

I. And,

II. *Secondly*, That the true End of these annual Humiliations is, *to weep for ourselves, and for our Children* ; to deplore the Guilt which our Forefathers contracted by this inhuman Deed, and which, we have reason to fear, is not even yet fully expiated.

I. *First*, In the early Ages of the Church, the Custom was annually to observe those Days, on which the *Martyrs* were *crowned* (such was the Language of that Time) not with dejected Looks, or any outward Expressions of Sorrow ; but with the Solemnities usual on *Birth-days* (and such also they were styled) even with all possible Instances of devout Exultation and Joy. Upon these Occasions, pious *Christians* flocked to the Places, where those faithful Servants of *Christ* slept, or had sealed the Truth of their Testimony with their Blood : *There* they

King CHARLES I.

9

they held their sacred Assemblies (as SERM. I. they afterwards built their Churches.)

There they made their Eucharistick Oblations, and celebrated their Feasts of Love; gave Thanks to God for the exemplary Virtues and Graces, which adorned the Lives and Deaths of those holy Persons, and excited themselves into like degrees of Christian Zeal and Fervor.

Their Behaviour in these Cases should be the Rule of Ours, and teach us to observe this Anniversary in such a manner, as may render it most honourable to the Dead, and most useful to the Living. To that end, it will become us, not vainly to indulge our Grief, or our Resentments, in behalf of our much injured Prince; not fruitlessly to spend our time in lamenting his Misfortunes; but rather to employ it in magnifying the Grace of God, which enabled him so constantly to endure them, and so heartily to forgive the Authors of them; which armed him with such a wondrous Degree

SERM. gree of Meekness and Patience ; inspired him with such *Christian* Magnanimity and Courage, as made him shine with a greater Lustre in the Depth of his Sufferings, than he did in his most flourishing Circumstances ; and put off his Crown after a more glorious Manner, than he first wore it on the Day of his Coronation.

Indeed, the Mind of Man, filled with vain Ideas of worldly Pomp and Greatness, is apt to admire those Princes most, who are most fortunate, and have filled the World with the Fame of their successful Achievements. But to those, who weigh Things in the Balance of right Reason, and true Religion, it will, I am persuaded, appear, that the Character of this excellent King, even while he was in his lowest and most afflicted State, had something in it, more truly Great and Noble, than all the Triumphs of Conquerors ; something, that raised him as far above the most prosperous Princes,

as

as they themselves seem raised above the S E R M.
rest of Mankind.

I.

Many Kings there have been, as
happy as all worldly Felicity could
make them; and some of these have
distinguished themselves as much by
their Virtues, as their Happinefs. But
the Possessors of those Virtues, being
seated on a *Throne*, displayed them
from thence with all manner of Ad-
vantage; their good Actions appeared
in the best Light, by reason of the
high Orb, in which they moved,
while performing them; whereas,
the Royal Virtues, which we this
Day celebrate, shone brightest in *Af-
fliction*, and when all external Marks
of Royal State and Dignity were want-
ing to recommend them. Others,
perhaps, may have been as just, as
beneficent, as merciful in the Ex-
ercise of their Royal Power, as this
good King was; but none surely did
ever maintain such a majestick Even-
ness and Serenity of Mind, when de-
spoiled of that Power, when stripped of
every

S E R M. every thing but a good Cause, and a
 I. good Conscience ; when destitute of
 ~~~~~ all Hopes of Succour from his Friends,  
 or of Mercy from his Enemies: *Then*,  
 even *then*, did he possess his Soul in  
 Peace, and patiently expect the Event,  
 without the least outward Sign of  
 Dejection or Discomposure. He re-  
 membered himself to be a King, when  
 all the World beside seemed to have  
 forgotten it ; when his Inferiors treat-  
 ed him with Insolence, and his E-  
 quals with Indifference ; when he was  
 brought before that infamous Tribu-  
 nal, where his own Subjects sat as his  
 Judges ; and even when he came to  
 die by their Sentence. — In *all* these  
 sad Circumstances, on *all* these trying  
 Occasions, he spake, he did nothing,  
 which misbecame the high Character  
 he bore, and will always bear, of a  
 great King, and one of the best of  
*Christians*. And this Mixture of un-  
 affected Greatness and Goodness, in  
 the Extremity of Misery, was, I say,  
 his peculiar and distinguishing Excel-  
 lence

lence. Other Royal Qualities, that adorn Prosperity, he shared in common with others of his Rank; but in the decent and kingly Exercise of these passive Graces, he had, among the List of Princes, no Superior, no Equal, no Rival.

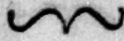
SERM.

I.

Indeed, the last Scene of his Sufferings was very dismal; and such, from which mere Human Nature, unsupported by extraordinary Degrees of Grace, must needs have shrunk back a little affrighted, and seemed desirous of declining. But those Succours were not wanting to him; for he went even through this last Trial, unshaken; and submitted his Royal Head to the stroke of the Executioner, with as much Tranquillity and Meekness, as he had born lesser Barbarities. The Passage through this *Red Sea* was bloody, but short; a Divine Hand strengthened him in it, and conducted him through it; and he soon reached the Shore of Bliss and Immortality.

He

SERM. He is now at Rest in those Mansi-

I.  ons, where *Tears are wiped from all Eyes, where there is neither Death, nor Pain, nor Crying, and from whence Sorrow and Sighs do flee away.* Wherefore, *Let us not mourn, refusing to be comforted;* but let us rather (as those early *Christians* did on the like Occasions) *rejoice with exceeding Joy:* Rendering to God our Thanks, that he hath been pleased in these last and most degenerate Times, to afford us such an illustrious Pattern of Virtue and Goodness, as even the purest Ages of *Christianity* would have looked up to with Reverence; that, by this Means, he hath given to loose and prophane Men an Instance of the great Power of those Religious Principles, which *did,* and which only *could* support the Mind of this pious Prince under all the Indignities and Miseries that beset him.

What an Honour is it to that Church, at whose Breast he first sucked these Principles, to have been instrumental



mental in sowing the first Seeds, from SERM.  
whence such excellent Fruits after-  
wards sprang! How ought she to boast I.  
and triumph in this Thought, That a  
Prince, who excelled as much in the  
Knowledge, as in the Practice of Re-  
ligion, should be so firm and unmove-  
able an Assertor of her Doctrine, and  
Discipline, and Worship! which he  
*therefore* valued highly, because he un-  
derstood them thoroughly: That he  
should go on to maintain *Her* Cause,  
even long after he despaired of main-  
taining his *Own*, or of being able to  
retrieve his lost Crown and Dignity!  
and that, after he had thus defended  
her *Faith*, during his *Life*, he should  
recommend it still more at his *Death*,  
by dying *in* it, and *for* it!

But the more Excellent the Chara-  
cter of this Prince was, the more bar-  
barous and brutal was the Rage by  
which he fell. Every Consideration,  
which heightens his matchless Vir-  
tues, and endears his Memory to us,  
serves also to enhance the Wickedness  
of



SERM. of those Sons of *Belial*, who were the

I. Instruments of his Ruin, and embued  
 their Hands in his Blood. And therefore, though we have no Occasion to weep for him, yet have we great Reason to weep for ourselves, and for our Children ; for the Guilt which the Nation contracted, and the Infamy it underwent, by reason of that inhuman Deed, and for the other fatal Consequences, which then did, and which (as we have just Reason to fear) may still attend it. And this is the second Point, upon which I proposed to enlarge :

II. Secondly, That Nations, as Nations, are liable to Guilt, and consequently to Punishment ; and such Punishments must be inflicted in this Life, in which alone those Nations and Communities subsist, and cannot be extended to another World, where all Kingdoms and People are to be swallowed up in the Kingdom of the Lamb, and to become one Fold under one Shepherd ;  
 and

and that the Punishments inflicted by SERM.  
God on Nations in this Life, may be I.  
altogether, or in part, deferred by God   
for some time, 'till the Iniquity of those  
Nations is full, and the Sinners grown  
ripe for Vengeance : These are all  
Points sufficiently evident from Reason  
and Scripture, and the History of  
the World ; they need no solemn Proof,  
because they admit of no great Doubt.  
Little indeed is said on this Head  
in the Books of the New Testament,  
which were all written for the Use of  
private scattered *Christians*, e'er as yet  
any one entire Nation was converted,  
or any of the great Rulers of the World  
had submitted their Scepters to the  
Scepter of *Christ* : And, therefore, the  
Precepts there contained, relate chiefly,  
if not solely, to the Conduct of  
particular Persons, and are silent as to  
the Methods of God's dealing with  
publick Bodies and Societies of Men.  
And there was the less Occasion for any  
Instructions of this kind in the New  
Testament, because they had been given

SERM. so frequently and fully in the Old ;  
 I. the Prophetick Parts of which do every  
 where inculcate these Doctrines, as the  
 Matters of Fact, recorded in the Historical Books, illustrate and confirm them. And from thence, therefore, all our Observations must be drawn, concerning the Influence which a People's Sins have upon their Sufferings, and concerning the Measures of that Political Justice, by which God governs the World. And in truth, it was proper that the Directions of this kind should be given under the Institution of *Moses*; the *Letter* of which extended no farther than to the Concerns of this Life: Whereas the Duties, the Promises, and Threatnings of the *Gospel* do all look beyond the Grave, and are designed to regulate our Behaviour in *this* World, as it relates and leads to *another*.

The Doctrine then of God's Visiting Nations, as such, for Sins committed by them in that Capacity, being supposed; let us briefly apply it to the  
 present

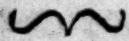


present Case, and see how far we our- SERM.  
selves are concerned in it. I.

That the Sin of this Day was *National*, is not to be denied; the Nation itself confesseth it, by appointing and observing these publick and stated Humiliations. It was under the Colour of a *National Authority*, that the *Rebellion* was first raised, and all along carried on, and at last consummated by the Erection of that infamous *High Court of Justice*, which gave the finishing Stroke to the successful Villanies of that Time, by taking away the Life of our Sovereign. Indeed, the greatest Part of the Nation abhorred that barbarous Act (and had their Power been equal to their Inclination, would have prevented it) but many of them had contributed to it too much, and too long before; and, having joined in all the *Steps* that led to the Murder of the King, could not at last, by expressing their Detestation of the *Crime*, excuse themselves entirely from the *Guilt* of it.



SERM. It was the *Nation* therefore, that

I. *Sinned*; and Sinned with an high Hand,  
 and with all the inflaming Circumstances of Guilt and Aggravation. They made their way to the Completion of this Wickedness, through the most solemn *Engagements*, through all the Ties of Reason, and the Reluctances of *Conscience*: The *Laws* of God and Man were but as *Withs* upon the Arms of *these Sampsons*, which they broke at pleasure; and, when they had once overleaped the Mounds and Fences of Justice, were resolved to think every Step lawful, which was necessary to justify those they had already taken. Many Years they continued stedfastly pursuing  
 Jer. viii. 5. these unrighteous Measures; *they held fast Deceit, and refused to return*; and after heaping Transgression upon Transgression, did at last, through the Blood of many of their *Fellow Subjects*, arrive at that of their *Sovereign*, and in the calmest and most deliberate manner perpetrate the black Design they had for some time meditated.

The

The *common* Methods, made use of SERM.  
 by *rebellious Subjects* in the *Destruction* I.  
 of *Princes*, did not please them; *Poi-*  
*son*, or a private *Assassination* was too  
*hasty* and *clandestine* a Way: They were  
 resolved to have the Proceeding more  
*Publick*, [and *Slow*, and *Solemn*; to car-  
 ry it on by the *Forms of Law*, and  
 with the *mock* Shew and Pageantry of  
*Justice* (a Way which crowned Heads  
 had not hitherto been treated in) and  
 since the *Crime* itself was *old*, and had  
 been often repeated, to recommend it  
 at least by the *Newness of the Inven-*  
*tion*: In which respect, it must be  
 confessed, that they *outstripped* all their  
*Rivals* in this Sort of Wickedness, e-  
 ven the bloodiest of their *King-killing*  
*Neighbours*. Indeed *new Inventions*  
 for slaughtering Kings, and overturn-  
 ing States, are the *peculiar Reproach*  
*of this Nation*; of which we have  
*two* eminent Proofs upon Record, not  
 to be paralleled in other Histories, the  
*Gun-powder Treason*, and *that of this*  
*Day*; One of them contrived by Pa-

SERM. *pists*, the *Other* by wild *Seſtaries* and

I. *Enthuſiaſts* ; neither of them (God be thanked) by the Members of *the Church of England* !

Jer. v. 8. And, *Shall I not viſit for ſuch Things, ſaith the Lord? Shall not my Soul be avenged of ſuch a Nation as this? Shall a People ſin in this remarkable Manner ; and ſhall not that Sin be as remarkably puniſhed? It was immediately, and in ſome meaſure puniſhed by the fatal and neceſſary Conſequences of it, by the ſad Diſorders and Confuſions that attended it. For, bad Zimri Peace who ſlew his Maſter? Did the Partners in this black Crime quietly reap the expected Fruits of it? No! they did not, they were ſoon diſplaced from the high Seat of Authority, which they had uſurped ; and gave way to other Uſurpers, and to various Forms of Government, which prevailed in their turns. The feveriſh Nation rolled from one Poſture, one Expedient to another, and found Reſt in none. It then ſoon appeared, how great the Loſs*

2 Kings  
ix. 31.

was



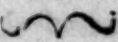
was of their admirable Prince, and of SERM.  
 their ancient Constitution, which per- I.  
 rished with him. The People, who  
 had miscalled his mild and gentle  
 Reign, Oppression and Tyranny, found  
 themselves now *ruled with a Rod of* Pf. ii. 9.  
*Iron, and broken in Pieces like a Pot-*  
*ter's Vessel.* They had complained of  
 Arbitrary Power *without Cause*, and  
 now *smarted* under it *without Remedy*.  
 To secure their *Liberty* and *Laws*, they  
 had made this *Change*; which left both  
 of them at the Mercy of *Standing Ar-*  
*mies.* Thus *did their own Wickedness* Jer. ii. 12.  
*correct them, and their Backslidings did*  
*reprove them!* They had pulled down  
 a regular Primitive Church; and im-  
 mediately Churches, Sects, and Reli-  
 gions, without Number, sprang up in  
 the room of it; instead of the honest  
 English *Plainness* and *Simplicity*, a de-  
 mure and sly *Hypocrisy* prevailed; in-  
 stead of sober and well-weighed *Devo-*  
*tions*, all the Freaks and Rants of *En-*  
*thusiasm.* Every Way of worshipping  
 God, *but the true One*, was publickly



SERM. *allowed; all Men were admitted to the*

I. *Exercise of the Sacred Function, but*  
 those who were most lawfully called to it, and best qualified for it. A Loud and Causeless Complaint of Impositions on the Consciences of Men, in Things pertaining to God, had helped to ruin the Church; and now, every little Society pretending to that venerable Name, did the very thing they had complained of; imposed the Platform of their Doctrine, Discipline, and Worship, as Divine; and were for rooting out all that opposed, or did not comply with it. In the mean time, they, who preserved themselves free from this sort of Infection, were in as much Danger of swerving to a contrary Extreme, and of making Inferences to the Prejudice of Religion itself, which they saw perverted and prostituted to the worst Designs. Even good Men, at the sight of these prosperous Hypocrites, were ready to cry out in the Words of complaining *Jeremiah*: — *Righteous art thou, O Lord, when I plead with thee;*

Jer. xii.  
 1, 2.

thee; yet let me talk with thee of thy SERM.  
*Judgments: Wherefore doth the Way* 1.  
*of the Wicked prosper? why are all*   
*they happy that deal very treacherous-*  
*ly? Thou hast planted them; yea, they*  
*have taken root, they grow, they bring*  
*forth Fruit: Thou art near in their*  
*Mouth, and far (very far) from their*  
*Reins! Then, when these hypocritical*  
*Pretenders to Godliness abounded, did*  
*an opposite Spirit of open Levity and*  
*Profaneness begin to gain Ground up-*  
*on a Serious and Religious People: Then*  
*were those Seeds of Infidelity first sown*  
*among us, which have since sprung up,*  
*and increased into a mighty Harvest.*  
*Our endless Divisions were a Scandal*  
*to the truly Pious, the Boast of Rome,*  
*and the Sport of Atheists: We were*  
*made a Reproach to our Neighbours, a* Psal. xliv,  
*Scorn and a Derision to them that were* 13, 14.  
*round about us; a Bye-word among the*  
*Heathen, a Shaking of the Head a-*  
*mong the People: We lay down in our*  
*Shame, and our Confusion covered us.*  
 No Words can express the various Sorts  
 of

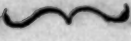
SER M. of Misery, under which this Nation

I. then groaned, *by reason of the Multitude of Oppressions and Oppressors.*

Job. xxxv. *New Lords had Dominion over us; the*  
 9. *very Refuse and Outcast of the People;*  
 Isa. iii. 5. *the Head became the Tail, and the*  
*Tail the Head; the Child behaved him-*  
*self proud again the Antient, and the*  
*Base against the Honourable. From*  
*Violence and Bloodshed this new Mo-*  
*del of Government had arisen; and*  
*the same Methods were requisite to*  
*cement and uphold it. Plunder and*  
*Rapine compleated the Devastations*  
*which War had begun: Armed Force*  
*decided Right, or executed the Sen-*  
*tence of those, who had no manner of*  
*Right to decide it: They were altoge-*  
 Ezek. xxii. *ther like Wolves, ravening the Prey to*  
 27. *shed Blood, and to destroy Souls to get*  
 Jer. iv. *dishonest Gain. As the Voice of a Wo-*  
 31. *man in Travail, as the Anguish of her*  
*that bringeth forth her first Child;*  
*such was then the Voice of the Daugh-*  
*ter of Sion, that bewailed herself, that*  
*spread forth her Hands, saying; Woe*



*is me now! for my Soul is weary, be-* SERM.  
*cause of Murderers!* I.

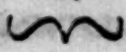
At last this Storm ceased, the Clouds  dispersed, and the Sun shone out again in his Strength; the Royal Family returned, and with it our old Constitution in Church and State; the Regicides suffered, and *the Land* seemed to be *cleansed of the Royal Blood, that was shed therein, by the Blood of those that shed it.* Thus, for a while, we vainly imagined; but sad Experience soon undeceived us. Not many Years passed, before God did again empty, as it were, at once, all the Vials of his Wrath upon us: The Sword raged abroad; Fire, and Pestilence at home: And when this goodly City was laid in Ashes, and Desolation and Emptiness reigned in her Streets, doubtless pious Persons did often reflect, how much her misemployed Wealth, and misguided Zeal had formerly contributed to the Miseries and Confusions under which we laboured: And even they, whom a few Years Plenty and Prof-



S E R M. Prosperity had lulled into a Forgetful-

I. nefs of their Guilt, began then to lay  
 ~~~~~ their Hands upon their Hearts, and  
 Gen. xlii. with *Joseph's* Brethren to say: *Verily,*
 21. *we are guilty concerning our Prince ;*
therefore is this Destruction come upon
us !

There was still a more terrible Judgment behind, which we were threatened with, and in some measure felt, tho' the Providence of God did not suffer it thoroughly to lay hold of us: I mean, the Advances made by Popery in a late Reign toward establishing itself among us. And this also was the Fruit of our former Iniquities ; for (to speak a plain Truth, which, plain as it is, has been lately treated with Scorn and Derision by shameless Writers) the Attempt of introducing a *Foreign Religion* was 'but too natural a Consequence of our forcing the *Royal Family* to take Shelter in *Foreign Countries* ; where they might be allured by the tempting Appearances of a splendid Worship, and a regular Hierarchy, and
 by

by glorious but empty Pretences to U-
niversality and Infallibility ; especially I.
at a Time, when the good *Frame* of 
our Ecclesiastical Polity here at home
was shattered and dissolved, and the
Honour of our Sion was laid low in the
Dust. Still therefore our Punishment
was from ourselves ; nor was God a
hard Master in inflicting it ; for we
reaped only what we had sowed, and
gathered what we had sowed ; and the
first Subversion of our Constitution
involved us in all the Confusions and
Miseries, in which we long *afterwards*
laboured. But *that* Storm also blew
over, and Times of *Liberty* succeeded,
wherein we promised ourselves the set-
tled Enjoyment of all manner of Ad-
vantages and Blessings. Can we say,
that those Hopes were not in great
measure defeated by the Spirit of Irre-
ligion and Libertinism, which then,
and ever since that Time notoriously
prevailed ; by those intestine Factions
and Discords, by which we have been
torn ; and that foreign War, under the
Weight

SERM. Weight of which we for more than

I. twenty Years groaned ? till the vast
 ~~~~~ Expende of Blood and Treasure, which  
 it occasioned, made us ready to cry  
 out in the pathetick Words of the Pro-

phet, *O thou Sword of the Lord, how  
 Jer. xlviii. long will it be e'er thou be quiet? Put  
 6. thyself up in thy Scabbard; rest, and  
 be still!*

And when that Sword rested in its  
 Scabbard, was not the Manner of  
 Sheathing it as unwelcome to us, as  
 even the Havock it had occasioned,  
 when naked and drawn! Was not the  
 good Queen (now with God) the Sub-  
 ject of malicious, but groundless Re-  
 proaches on that very Account? Did  
 we not murmur at the Blessing, and  
 bring ourselves, at last, with great Dif-  
 ficulty to relish and approve it?

But may we not now at length hope,  
 that all is well with us, and that the  
 ill Consequences of spilling the Royal  
 Blood of this Day are ceased, the An-  
 ger of God appeased, and our National  
 Guilt utterly pardoned? How can that

be



be, until the Nation itself hath manifestly repented? And the Repentance of a Nation for any Sin is best testified by its general Abhorrence of the Principles and Practices that caused it. And are we able in this manner to purge ourselves of this Day's Transgression? Do we, indeed, give evident Proofs, that we heartily and universally detest it? If that be really our Case, *what meaneth then this Bleating of the Sheep in our Ears, and this Lowing of the Oxen which we bear?* How comes it to pass, that these Anniversary Humiliations are so openly spoken against, ill treated and derided? Why has the horrid *Guilt* of the Day been lessened in Publick Discourses, and represented with all manner of Alleviations and *Softnings*? As if it were unpopular and imprudent, to paint such a Villany to the Life, or to speak of it in suitable Terms of Ignominy and Reproach! Why have the *Doctrines*, which paved the Way to this bloody Deed been freely revived, embraced, and cherished;

SERM.

I.

1 Sam. xv.

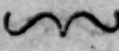
14.



SERM. and *those*, for which the Sufferers in

I. the Royal Cause underwent all manner  
 of Persecutions, been discountenanced  
 and exploded? Why has the Spirit of  
*Liberty* been indulged to an outrageous  
 Degree of *Licentiousness*; the Reve-  
 rence due to Thrones shaken by mean  
 and insolent Pens; and Contempt  
 poured on the sacred Character of  
 Princes, *as though they had not been*  
*anointed with Oyl*? Why have Le-  
 ctures, in such sacred Places as these,  
 been more than once read to the Peo-  
 ple, not only with Permission, but Ap-  
 plause, instructing them how *near* they  
 might approach towards the *Sin* of Re-  
 bellion, without *actually* incurring the  
 Guilt of it? And why have impious  
 Wretches by their *Mock Feasts* ridi-  
 culed our *Solemn Fasts*, without being  
 punished, or (which is yet a worse Sign)  
 even without being detected in order  
 to Punishment? Certainly, these are  
 no good *Proofs* of our Abhorring the  
 Sin of the Day; and why then should  
 we flatter ourselves with the Thought,  
 that

2 Sam. i.  
21.

that God hath left off to abhor, and SERM.  
 will no longer continue to chastise us I.  
 for the Sake of it? *Truly* (to use our   
 Saviour's Words) *ye bear witness, that* Luke xi.  
*ye allow the Deeds of your Fathers; for* 48.  
*they indeed killed the Prophets, and*  
*ye build their Sepulchres; that is, Ye*  
 pay some outward Respect to their  
 Ashes, some ceremonious Regard to  
 their Memories; but without renounc-  
 ing the Principles, and abominating the  
 Practices, that led to the spilling that  
*Righteous Blood*, which, therefore, we  
 have Reason to fear, may be *required*  
*even of this Generation.* When, and  
 in what manner, God will require it,  
 he alone knows. But if we consider  
 the Height of all Sorts of Wickedness,  
 to which we are now arrived; the  
 open Contempt of Religion, and Scorn  
 of sacred Persons and Things, that  
 reigns among us; the intestine Dis-  
 cords, by which we are torn at home;  
 the Dangers which have threatened us  
 from abroad, and (however we may  
 say, *Peace, Peace*, to ourselves) still  
 VOL. IV. D do

S E R M. do threaten us, we have just Cause to

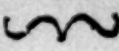
1. apprehend, that the compleat Measure of our Iniquity is almost filled up, and that the Day of our Visitation is not far off.

But do not thou, O Lord, to whom Vengeance belongeth, do not thou deal with us according to our Deserts; be not displeased at us for ever, neither stretch out thy Wrath from one Generation to another! Command thy destroying Angel, when he goeth through the City (as the Prophet Ezekiel speaks) to set a Mark upon the Forehead of all those that sigh, and that cry for the Abomination, which hath been done in the midst thereof; and either to spare the whole for their Sakes; or, at least, not to smite the Righteous together with the Wicked! Make us deeply sensible of this, and all other our great Enormities, and of thy wondrous Lenity and Forbearance! Teach us, even yet in this our Day (if it be possible) the Things that belong to our Peace, e'er they be bid from our Eyes! Teach us by a

Re-

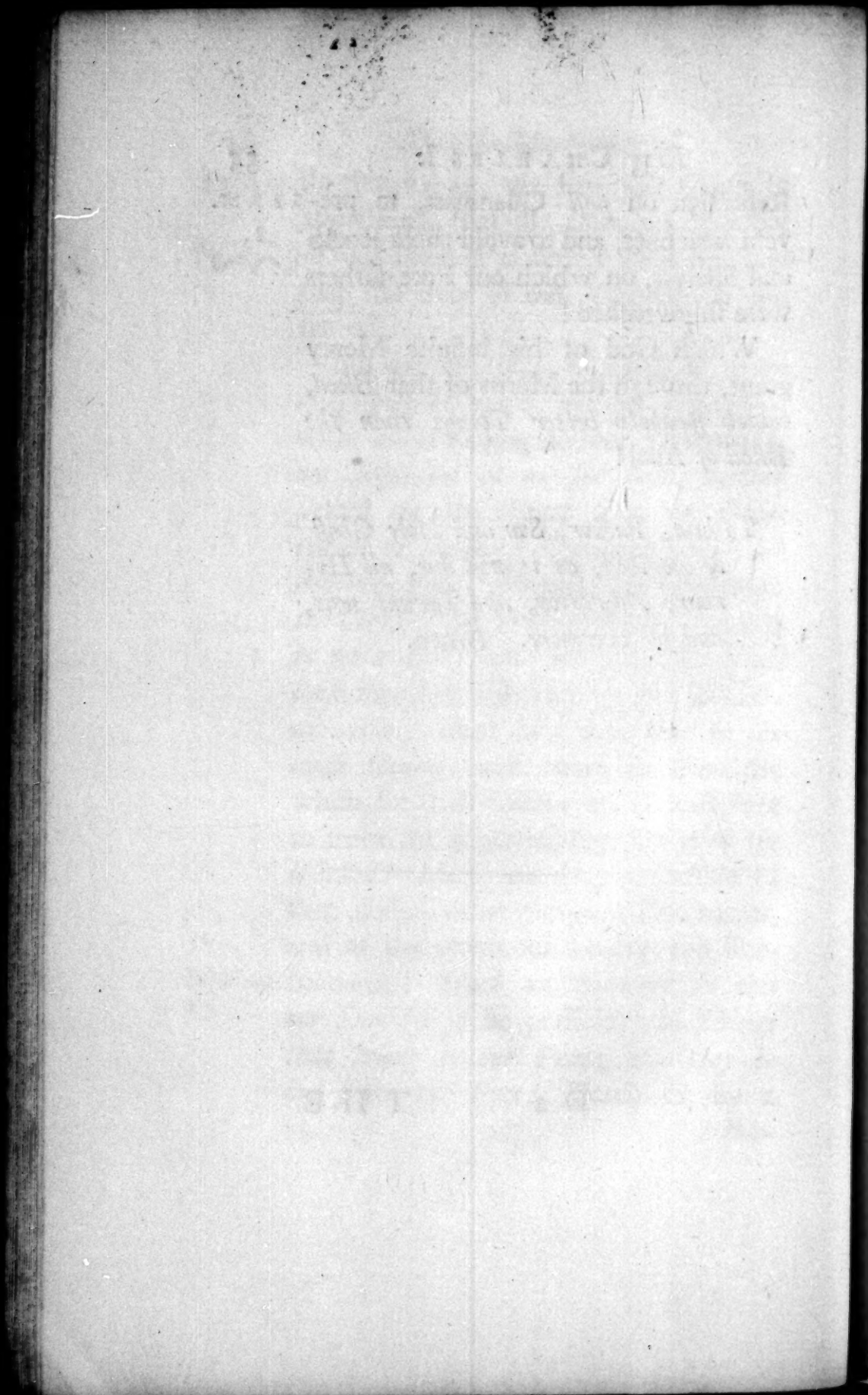
Luke xix.  
42.



Reflection on *past* Calamities, to pre-SERM.  
vent *new* ones, and to avoid those Rocks I.  
and Shelves, on which our Fore-fathers   
were shipwrecked!

Which God of his infinite Mercy  
grant, through the Merits of that *Blood*,  
*which speaketh better Things than the*  
*Blood of Abel!*

*To him, Father, Son and Holy Ghost,*  
*be ascribed, as is most due, all Ho-*  
*nour, Adoration, and Thanks, now,*  
*and for evermore. Amen.*



---

THE  
Wicked Lives of *Christians*

NO ARGUMENT against the  
TRUTH of Christianity.

---



---

THE

Wicked Lives of Christians

No. 1. 1793

Trinity of Christianity

---

D 1

---

*The wicked Lives of CHRISTAINS  
no Argument against the Truth of  
Christianity.*

---

A  
S E R M O N

Preached at

St. JAMES'S Chapel.

APRIL 26, 1713.

---

I TIM. vi. 1.

—*That the Name of God, and his  
Doctrines be not blasphemed.*

THE Purity and Perfection of the SERM.  
Christian Morality, considering II.  
the Meanness of the Persons who pu-  
blished

S E R M. blished that Doctrine, is a sure Argu-

II. ment of its divine Original and Authority. But then the *Lives* of many *Christians*, led in a Way so little answerable to the *Precepts of Christ*, are a mighty Dishonour to our Religion, and give Occasion, to those who seek Occasion, to reproach and blaspheme it.

What signifies it, says the Libertine, or indeed how can one be satisfied, that the Gospel is of heavenly Extraction; when we see, it hath no more Efficacy and Influence on the Hearts and Lives of those who profess it, than other Religions that are of mere Human Contrivance; when there is as much Impiety, and Vice of all Sorts among those *that name the Name of Christ*, as amongst the *Mahometans* and *Heathens*?

This popular Objection St. *Paul* appears to have had much upon his Thoughts, and doth therefore frequently press his new Converts in this and other Epistles, to distinguish themselves by a becoming Sanctity of Life and Manners; for *this* Reason, among  
others,

*no Proof against Christianity.*

41

*others, That the Name of God and his Doctrines be not blasphemed.*

SERM.

II.

If there were great Occasion for such Exhortations *then*, there is much greater *now*; when the Manners of *Christians* are degenerated so far, not only from the *Precepts* of *Christ*, but even from the Pattern set by those first Believers; and when there are even among those, who call themselves *Christians*, *some*, as ready to lay hold of this Objection, and to urge it in Prejudice of our Religion, as any of the most determined Heathens, even *Porphry*, *Celsus*, or *Julian* himself, were.

From the Words therefore, a proper Occasion will be given me to enquire,

*First*, What Ground there is for a Complaint of the extreme Wickedness of Men now under the Evangelical Dispensation.

I.

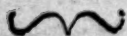
*Secondly*, Allowing the Complaint to be just, how little Reason there yet would

II.



S E R M. would be for turning it to the Disad-

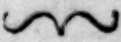
II. vantage of Christianity itself. And,



III. *Thirdly*, What are the Inferences that may more justly and naturally be deduced from it.

I. *First*, I am to consider, What *just* Ground or Colour there may be for a Complaint of the exceeding Wickedness of Men now under the Christian Dispensation.

And here it may with Truth be observed, to the Advantage of our holy Religion, that, as bad as Men are under it, they would have yet been worse without it; since, upon a just Comparison of *Christians*, even in these later Times, with the Enemies of the Cross of *Christ*, it will, I am persuaded, be found, that the Manners of the *one* are not quite so corrupt and vicious as those of the *other*. There may perhaps be some *particular Christians* more abandoned to all Sorts and Degrees of Impiety, than any even of the most

most profligate Heathens (for which S E R M.  
Instances I shall account in what fol- II.  
lows) but surely *Christendom*, as to the   
*general* State of it, is not equally scan-  
dalous in this respect, with those Parts  
of the World, that are Strangers to  
*Christ*; those Parts of it, I mean, where  
the Incentives to Luxury, Ambition,  
and every Sort of Vice do equally a-  
bound.

And therefore the aggravating De-  
scriptions that have been given of this  
Matter by some pious and pathetic  
Pens, are not to be interpreted too  
strictly. The Faults of *Christians* are  
obvious and manifest to those of the  
same Faith, and strike our Imaginations  
strongly on the account of their Near-  
ness; whereas the Vices of the Heathen  
World, being practised at a Distance,  
and coming to our Knowledge by rare  
and uncertain Reports, do therefore  
make but faint Impressions on our  
Minds.

The Rule, by which *Christians* are  
obliged to walk, is so excellent, and  
they

S E R M. they are thereby so fully and clearly

11. informed of the whole Extent of their  
 ~~~~~ Duty; the promised Assistances are so  
 mighty, and the Rewards so vast, by
 which they are animated to Obedience;
 that *their* Transgressions, as they are
 attended with a deeper *Guilt*, so must
 needs appear to be of a more prodigi-
 ous *Size*, than those of *other* Men.
 And it is no wonder therefore, if, on
both these Accounts, good and holy
 Persons have spoken of them with a
 particular Degree of Detestation and
 Horror.

And as the *Vices* of *Christians* are,
 for these Reasons, open and glaring, so
 their *Virtues* oftentimes disappear and
 lie hid. The profound Humility and
 Self-denial, which the Christian Reli-
 gion first enjoined, leads the true Dis-
 ciples of *Christ*, in the Exercise of the
 chief Gospel Graces, to shun the Ap-
 plause and Sight of Men, as much as
 is possible. Hence, some of the best
Christians are least known to be such,
 because they make the least Noise and
 Shew

Shew with their Goodness. There is S E R M.
 nothing extraordinary or singular in their II.
 Manner of Life and Behaviour; no O-
 stentation of Sanctity in Look, Word,
 or Deed. Notwithstanding their Do-
 mestick Severities, yet, when they
 come abroad, they *anoint the Head, and* Matt. vi.
wash the Face, that they appear not 17.
unto Men to fast. They found no
 Trumpet before their Alms, or other
 good Works; but endeavour to perform
 them with that Secresy, which our Sa-
 viour recommended, when he said, *Let* Matt. vi.
not thy Right Hand know what thy Left 3.
Hand doth.

And of this there is *One*, though a
 very late, yet so remarkable an In-
 stance, that for the Honour of our ho-
 ly Faith, I think it may deserve to be
 particularly mentioned; the Instance,
 I mean, of the Author of that excel-
 lent Book, the *Whole Duty of Man*;
 who took not more Care to do good
 to the World, than he did to conceal
 the Doer of it; being contented to ap-
 prove himself to him, and him only,
 who

S E R M. *who seeth in secret*, and resolved that the

II. Praise of Men, whether in his Life, or
 after his Death, should be no Part of
 his Reward.

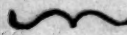
On these, and such Accounts as these, I say, Vice *seems* to have the Odds of Virtue among *those, who name the Name of Christ*, much more than it really *hath*. However, after all the Abatements that have been, or can be made in this Case, still it must be owned, That the Wickedness of *Christians* is exceeding great, and, considering the special Helps towards Holiness, which they above the rest of the World enjoy, very amazing. Even good Men, when they find all the powerful Means of Grace proposed in the Gospel, to have so little Success, are apt to be somewhat startled at it; and ill Men do not fail to make a very ill Use of it, and to turn it to the Disadvantage of Christianity itself.

II. *Secondly*, That they are very unreasonable in so doing, I am in the next place to shew. For,

I. The

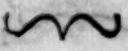
I. The holiest and purest Doctrine S E R M.
imaginable is *but Doctrine* still; it can II.
only instruct, admonish, or persuade; 
it cannot compel. The Gospel Means
of Grace, powerful as they are, yet are
not, and ought not to be irresistible.
They are Moral Causes, which do not
violently constrain our Wills and Af-
fections; but only by gentle Methods
solicit and incline them. They work
not like a Medicine, or a Charm, with-
out our Concurrence and Co-operation.
And therefore let the Discoveries of
our Duty and Happiness now made,
be never so bright and clear, yet a
Multitude of *Christians* may still so
live, as if there was no such Disco-
veries. And this is no greater a Won-
der, than it is, that the Lusts and Pas-
sions of frail Men should often get the
better of their Reason; and the truest
Sense and Knowledge of our Duty give
way in the Presence of mighty Temp-
tations; which always hath been, al-
ways will, and must be the Case, while
Human Nature consists (as it doth) of
jarring

SERM. jarring Principles, and the corrupt Part

II. of us is (as it generally is) the prevailing
 Ingredient in the Composition.

Let the *Gospel* have never so *little* Success in promoting Holiness, yet all who have considered it, must own, that it is in itself *as* fit as any thing that can be imagined for that Purpose, and incomparably *more* fit than any *other* Course that ever was taken. If therefore the desired *End* be not attained, we must not blame the *Means*, which are confessedly apposite and proper, but the *Men*, who refuse or neglect to make use of them. The Rules of Health, and the Prescriptions of the Physician may be good; and yet few be the better for them, if few strictly observe them. It is no Disparagement to the Art, if those receive no great Benefit from it, who do not surrender themselves up to the Methods it prescribes.

Did *Philosophy* suffer in the Opinion of wise Men, on the Account of the *Debaucheries* that reigned in those
 Ages,

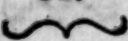
Ages, wherein it flourished most among S E R M.
the *Grecians* and *Romans*? Was it then II.
thought a good *Inference*, that, because 
Men were very dissolute, when Wisdom was at the Height, and the Light of Reason shone brightest, *therefore* Wisdom and Reason were of little *Use* towards making Men *Virtuous*? No! the Excellence and Fitness of the Rule was universally acknowledged; and all the Blame was laid on those, who did not comply with it. Object in the like manner against *natural* Religion to a *Deist*, and he will give you the like Answer. And why then should he not receive the same Apology for *revealed* Religion, in its Turn? If the ill Conduct of those, who embrace any Rule of Life and Manners, be a reasonable Exception against the Rule itself, there's an End of all Rules whatsoever; since none there are, from which most of those, who in *Theory* approve them, do not in *Practice* mightily swerve and decline. But,

S E R M. 2. The present Wickedness of *Chri-*

II. *stians* cannot be owing to any Defect in the Doctrine of *Christ*, nor be urged as a Proof of the real Inefficacy of it towards rendering Men holy; because there *was* a Time, when it had all the Success of this kind, that could be expected; the Time, I mean, of its earliest Appearance in the World; when the Practice of the Generality of *Christians* was a just Comment on the Precepts of *Christ*; and they could appeal from their Doctrines to their Lives, and challenge their worst Enemies to shew any remarkable Difference between them. When they were, as the

Phil. ii. 15. Apostle speaks, *blameless, and harmless, the Sons of God, without Rebuke, in the midst of a crooked and perverse Nation, among whom they shone as Lights in the World.* When they were so far from Injustice and Wrong, and the several wicked Arts of Deceiving, that in the vast Multitude of Converts,

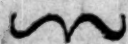
Acts iv. 32. *No Man said that ought was his own, but they had all things common, and*
were

were not only of one *Faith*, and of SERM.
 one *Worship*, but of one *Heart*, and of II.
 one *Soul*. Now, if the Efficacy and 
 Power of the Christian Doctrine must
 be tried by its Fruits, why may we
 not have leave to take it at its first set-
 ting out, and to argue, that the most
 immediate and nearest must have been
 the most natural and genuine Effects of
 it? He that would try the Goodness of
 a Spring, should go to the Fountain
 Head itself, and not judge of it by
 Streams from thence at a great Distance
 derived, which many other Waters
 may perhaps have fallen into during its
 Course, and many impure Mixtures
 have defiled.

The Gospel is the same *now*, as it
 was *then*; equally the Power of God Rom. i.
unto Salvation, equally mighty in pull- 16.
ing down of strong Holds; and there- 2Cor. x. 4.
 fore, that it doth not still produce the
same Effects, must be owing, not to
 any Ineptitude or Defect in the *Means*,
 but to *other* Causes and Considerations,

S E R M. some of which I shall now briefly ex-

II. plain. And,



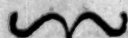
I. There must needs be a great Disparity between the *first Christians*, and those of these *latter Ages*; because Christianity was the Religion of their Choice. They took it up, while it was persecuted, and they could have no other Inducement to receive it, but a Conviction of its Excellence, which they attained by impartial and diligent Enquiries; the Effect of which was, that the holy Precepts and precious Promises of the Gospel made a lively and durable Impression on them. Whereas Christianity with us is generally not a Matter of Choice, but of Fashion and good Luck. We are born, where it is professed; and we fall into it, as we do into other prevailing Opinions and Customs, of Course; and no wonder therefore, if it floats only on the Surface of our Minds, if it *takes not Root downwards*, and consequently doth not *bring Fruit upwards*, in our Life and Practice. For the Gospel, tho'

tho' it be the great Instrument of HO- SER M.
linefs, yet can make thofe alone Holy, II.
who confider and weigh it, and faften
its holy Rules upon their Hearts and
Confciencces by Meditation and Study.

2. Another Account of the great Degeneracy of *Chriftians* may be drawn from Mens erecting *new* Schemes of Christianity, which interfere with the true and genuine Account of it. *Some* Men rely on the mere *Externals* of Religion, on *Maffes*, and *Pilgrimages*, *Indulgences*, and *bodily Austerities*: And if all *theſe* fail, they have a Reſerve ſtill, in the Merits and Interceſſions of *Saints* and *Angels*. *Others*, who call themſelves *Chriftians*, have no regard for the *Dead Letter* of Scripture, but regulate themſelves by a certain *Light within*, by unaccountable Impulſes and Inspirations. There are yet *others*, who hope to be ſaved by a bare Act of Recumbency on the *Merits* of *Chriſt*, and by the *Free Grace* of the Goſpel, without obſerving the *Law of Works*, without being tied to the E-

S E R M. lements of Bondage, and carnal Ordinances.

II.



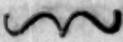
Now *these Schemes* (and the same we might say of some *others*) subvert the true *Gospel Scheme* of Salvation, by *Repentance from dead Works*, and becoming a New Creature; and as far as they do so, must needs undermine the Interest of Virtue and Goodness, and smoothe the Way towards the Commission of Wickedness. If all the World embraced the Doctrine of *Christ* in its Simplicity and Purity, without adultering it by false Mixtures, it would be far more Operative and Effectual than now it is, towards reforming Mens Lives, and sanctifying their Natures. But when they frame to themselves a Gospel, which *Christ* and his Apostles never preached, and expect to be saved on any other Terms and Conditions than those God hath proposed; 'tis no wonder if from such an Evil Root, as Evil Fruit arises; and they grow as corrupt in their Practice, as they are in their Opinions.

The

The same may be said of some over-SERM.
easy and loose, or over strict and ri-II.
gorous Decisions in Matters of Con-
science. Many *modern Casuists* have
bent their Thoughts, and strained their
Wits, in order to *soften* the Severity of
the Gospel Morals, and to bring them
down, as near as they can, not only
to the *Infirmities*, but even the *Vices*
of Human Nature. They have invent-
ed an Art of *Lying* without *Sinning*:
They have allowed a Man to act on
that Side of an Opinion, which he is
satisfied is *false*, so it carry but any
Shew of *Probability* with it; and they
have determined it to *be* probable, if
two or three grave Writers of Note
have espoused it. They have made
good *Ends* capable of Sanctifying the
worst and most forbidden *Means*; have
declared it not necessary for a Man to
exercise more than *one* Act of Love to-
wards God in his *whole* Life-time, or
to be contrite for his Sins, but on his
Death bed. And these are the Posi-
tions, not only of a few, obscure, but

S E R M. of very many, and very celebrated Authors; and cannot therefore but go on a great way towards debauching the Minds of all such as have any Reverence for those *Casuits*.

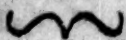
On the other side, good, but mistaken Men have sometimes carried the Doctrine of the Gospel to a very severe and astonishing Height; and framed from thence such Rules of Life, and Determinations in Morality, as directly opposed the first and most innocent Inclinations of Human Nature. And in this they thought, they had done God and Men good service; but the Event has disproved them. For some Persons finding Religion represented as so melancholy and sour a thing, have concluded, that God, the Author of our Nature, could never be the Author of so unnatural and extravagant a Scheme; and have thereupon rejected it at once, and set themselves loose from all the Ties of Morality. Others, still adhering to the Truth of the Doctrine, have yet been so far discouraged
by

by the uncomfortable and forbidding SERM.
Look of it, as to lay aside all Hopes ei- II.
ther of duly practising or relishing it; 
and have therefore resolved rather to en- Heb. xi.
joy the Pleasures of Sin for a Season, and ^{25.}
run the Venture of their future Happi-
ness, than be certainly miserable here,
for fear of being so hereafter. And a
third Sort there are, who have endea-
voured to raise their Practice up to
these Speculations; but failing (as how
could they but fail?) have sunk into
Religious Despair, concluded themselves
Reprobates, out of the Favour of God,
and a State of Salvation.

So that too *easy* and too *severe* De-
cisions have *alike* done Disservice to
Religion; *These* perhaps have fright-
ened near as many from the Prosecu-
tion of *Virtue*, as *Those* have allured to
the Commission of *Vice*; but the True
Doctrine of the Gospel, which steers
between these Extremes, is not an-
swerable for the Excesses on either side,
and ought not therefore to be blas-
phemed

S E R M. phemed on the account of them. We

II. may add in the



3^d Place, That 'tis not to be expected, but that, where *Christians* are wicked, they should be rather worse than other Men; for this very Reason, because they have more Help towards becoming better, and yet live in the Contempt or Neglect of them. Those excellent Rules of Life, which they will not suffer to do them Good, must for that very Reason do them Harm, if they set their Faces against so plain a Revelation of their Duty, and resolve to Sin in Defiance of it. For, *if the Light that is in them be Darkness, how great is that Darkness?*

Matt. vi.
23.

How great, even according to the natural Course and Tendency of Things, whereby what is good, when corrupted, grows bad in proportion to its former Goodness: How much greater, in respect of the just Judgments of God, who punishes such Persons with the total Dereliction of his Spirit, and a Penal Blindness; *giving those up to a Reprobate*

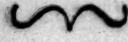
Rom. i.
28.

Reprobate Mind, who thus hold the S E R M.
Truth in Unrighteousness. II.

Lastly, The Faith of *Christ* suffers much from the ill Lives of those, who have nothing of Christianity but the *Name*; and are, whilst they reproach it for the ill Conduct of its Professors, themselves the greatest Reproach to it. Set aside the Disorders of the *almost Christians*, and of such as, whatever they may outwardly profess, do not sincerely and heartily love *our Lord Jesus*; and one great Occasion of Blaspheming the Doctrine of *Christ* will be removed. 'Tis very hard therefore to make our Faith answerable for the ill Manners of those, who do not in good Earnest receive it; but much harder still, that those very Men should press the Objection most eagerly, without whose loose and immoral Lives, there would not be near so much Ground and Colour for it.

This is as if *Catiline* should have declaimed against the Debaucheries of *Rome*, whilst he and his Accomplices
were

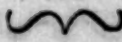
SERM. were in the Midst of it, and had con-

II. tributed to bring it to that Pitch of
 Wickedness, which they had complained of.

Many other instructive Reflections might be suggested on these Heads: But thus much may suffice to shew, How far there is any real Occasion for a Complaint of the exceeding Wickedness of Men, now under the Christian Dispensation; and then, supposing the Complaint just, how little Reason there would be, to turn it to the Disadvantage of Christianity itself. It remains, that I should point out to you, on my

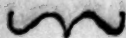
III. *Third General Head*, some more proper and natural Inferences that may be drawn from it. They are *many* and *weighty*: But I will not detain you further than by the Mention of a few of them.

And, 1. This should be so far from shocking our Faith, that it ought, on the contrary, to confirm and strengthen it,

it. For the universal Degeneracy of S E R M.
Christians in these latter Days was II.
 plainly and punctually foretold by *Christ* 
 and his Apostles. *When the Son of* Lukexviii.
Man cometh, shall he find Faith on the 8.
Earth? said our Saviour. Now the
Spirit speaketh (says St. Paul in his first
 Epistle to Timothy) *that in the latter* ch. iv. 1, 2.
Times some shall depart from the Faith,
giving Heed to seducing Spirits, and
Doctrines of Devils; speaking Lies in ch. iv. 12.
Hypocrisy, having their Consciences fear-
ed with a hot Iron. And in his second
 Epistle, *This know, that in the last Days* ch. iii. 1, 2.
perilous Times shall come; for Men shall
be Lovers of their own selves, Covetous,
Boasters, Proud, Blasphemers: To which
 he adds a large Catalogue of the black-
 est and worst of Sins which should then
 abound. And parallel Passages to these
 are also to be found in St. Peter's and
 St. Jude's Epistles. Now the Testimo- Rev. xix.
ny of Jesus is that Spirit of Prophecy; 10.
 and if he therefore and his Apostles by
 that Spirit of Prophecy forewarned us
 of this Event, it should not, methinks,
 lessen

S E R M. lessen our Esteem of their Doctrine, to

II. see that Prediction fulfilled.



Nay, the vicious Lives of the Generality of *Christians* is an Argument for the Truth of Christianity on another Account. For the professed Design of God in revealing it, being to reform the World, and that Design being so remarkably defeated ; were not our Religion founded on a Rock, on the most apparent Reason, and most incontestable Miracles, it must, a long time ago, have sunk under the Weight of this

Acts v. 38, *single* Prejudice. *Had this Counsel, or*
39. *this Work been of Men, it would, under such a Disadvantage, have certainly come to nought ; but it being of God, nothing can overthrow it.* We may from hence in the

2^d Place, Take occasion to consider the monstrous Degree of Pravity and Perverseness, that is hid in the Heart of Men, and to account for the Rise of it. It is plainly such, and so great, we see, as to be Proof against the brightest Discoveries of God's Will, and our
Duty ;

Duty; such as no Rules can rectify, no Endeavours can reform.

S E R M.

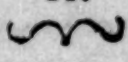
II.

And this *One* Reflection, duly attended to, would satisfy us, that we are not now in our *Natural State*, and 'as we came forth from the Hands of God; but fallen and degenerated from primitive Perfection. For can it enter into the Heart of Man to conceive, that the noblest Part of the visible Creation should, in its Original Frame and Constitution, be the most Imperfect and Faulty? That Man should have been created by God, with such violent Tendencies to Evil, and such rooted Aversions from Goodness, as at present discover themselves in him? Even without the Light of Revelation, it would, on this very Account, be highly reasonable for us to believe (what those, who reasoned best among the Heathens, the Scholars of *Socrates* did believe) that some Change must needs have happened in our Faculties and Natures, since they were first formed; and that our Souls are now placed in a
State,

S E R M. State, not of natural Dignity and Excellence, but of Probation and Recovery.

3. It will be a *third* good Use of what has been discoursed, if we learn from thence, not to measure Doctrines by Persons, or Persons by Doctrines; that is, not to make the One a compleat Rule and Standard, whereby to judge of the Goodness or Badness of the Other. I cannot now duly explain this Reflection, and shall therefore employ it only in order to wipe off a Reproach, that hath been sometimes cast on that excellent *Church*, of which we are Members; as if ill Livers abounded more than ordinarily in *her* Communion. I trust in God, the Aspersion is utterly false and groundless; the mere Effect of Malice, Envy, or Design. But, were it never so true, yet would not this be a Touchstone to try her Doctrines by; since for the same Reason that the *Wickedness of Christians in general* is no Argument against the *Truth* of Christianity, the Wickedness

to

to be found in any *particular* Society S E R M.
 of *Christians*, can be no Objection a- II.
 gainst the *Doctrines* particularly pro- 
 fessed in that Society. By *Scripture*
 and by *Reason* Religious Opinions are
 to be examined; and not by the Lives
 and Practice of those who espouse
 them.

However, since the World is for the
 most part composed of such as do not
 reason rightly, but judge merely by
 outward Appearances; since Mankind
 are generally so made, that the holiest
 Religion in the World must needs suffer
 in their Opinions, on the Account of
 the ill Lives of those who profess it; let
 us therefore make this

4th and last Use of what has been
 said, To excite ourselves from thence
 to do what in us lies towards removing
 this Scandal from the Christian Faith
 at large, and from that particular
 Church of *Christ* to which we belong;
 both by living *Ourselves*, as becomes
 our holy Religion; and by influencing
Others, as we have Ability and Oppor-
 tunity,

S E R M. tunity, to live as *we* do; that so both

II. *we*, and *they* may adorn the *Doctrines* of
 Tit. ii. 10. *God our Saviour in all Things*; may
 render it lovely and desirable in the
 Eyes of all Men, even its fiercest Ene-
 mies and Opposers; *having our Con-*
 1 Pet. ii. 12. *versation* (as the Apostle speaks) *honest*
among the Gentiles (and those who are
 worse than *Gentiles*; *Christians* in Name
 and Profession, but at the Bottom hard-
 ended and seared Unbelievers) *that,*
whereas they speak against us as Evil-
doers, they may by our good Works, which
they shall behold, glorify God in the Day
of Visitation.

The *primitive Christians* (as you have
 heard) appealed freely from their *Doc-*
trines to their *Lives*, in Confirmation
 of the Truth of Christianity: *We*, on
 the contrary, are forced to appeal from
 our *Lives* to our *Doctrines*; and to
 shelter ourselves under the indisputable
 Goodness of the Rule we embrace,
 whilst we are guilty of very many,
 and very great Deviations from it. Let
 us be ashamed to make use of this Ar-
 gument

gument any longer, and resolve to ren- SERM.
 der our *Actions* and *Opinions* perfectly II.
consistent; that so our *Religion* may ap-
 pear to be, not a Notional *System*, but
 a vital and fruitful *Principle of Holiness*;
 and we may save not only our own Souls,
 but the Souls of many others also, who
 shall be won over to the *Obedience of the* 1 Pet. iii.
Faith, by *observing our good Conversa-* 16.
tion in Christ Jesus:

*To whom, with the Father, and blef-
 sed Spirit, be ascribed all Majesty,
 Might, and Praise, now and for
 ever. Amen.*

THE
FEAR of GOD

A Proper and Sufficient

Motive to HOLINESS.

F 3

THE
FEAR OF GOD

A Short and Plain

Method to Holiness

The Fear of God a Motive to Holiness.

A
S E R M O N

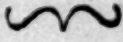
Preached at

St. JAMES'S Chapel.

March 20, 1718-19.

PHIL. vi. 1.

*Work out your own Salvation with Fear
and Trembling.*

THE wise and good Author of our S E R M.
Nature, foreseeing that, in this III.
degenerate and corrupted State of it, the 
Rules of Duty he prescribed, would not,
without great Difficulty and Reluctance
be complied with, hath been graciously
F 4 pleased

S E R M. pleased to address himself, not to our

III. *Reason* only, but our *Passions* also, and to enforce his *Commands*, by proposing, together with them, such *Motives* and *Considerations*, as (he *knew*) would have the *greatest* Influence towards determining our Choice; towards securing, and enlivening our Christian Obedience. And the most operative of these Motives seems to be *that*, which applies itself to our *Fears*, and urges upon us the strict Practice of Virtue, by the *Threats* of divine Vengeance, which will certainly attend our Disobedience. This Consideration the sacred Writers frequently inculcate; and particularly St *Paul* in the Words of the Text, wherein he exhorts the *Philippians* to *work out their own Salvation with Fear and Trembling*.

On which Words I intend to build this plain, but useful Proposition, That
 “ A Fear of God’s Wrath, and of eternal Punishment, is a *proper* and *sufficient* Motive to lead Men to Holiness.” This seems to be a very *evident* Truth; and yet those, who have
 to

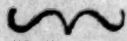
to deal with scrupulous Consciences, SERM.
know, that some very pious and well- III.
meaning *Christians*, do in good earnest
doubt of it; and will not allow them-
selves to be in a *Regenerate* Estate, or
to have a sure Title to the Divine Fa-
vour, because their Repentance wholly
took its Rise at the first, and hath since
perhaps in some measure received its
Growth and Increase from that base and
slavish Principle of *Fear*, to which,
they imagine the true *Sons of Adoption*
and *the Elect of God* are always Stran-
gers.

To remove the Scruples, under which
such good, but mistaken Men labour,
shall be the Business of my present Dis-
course; Wherein I will endeavour,

First, By some *general* Reflections to I.
lessen the ill Opinion, which these Per-
sons entertain of themselves; And then
proceed,

Secondly, To *prove* more directly, II.
that the Principle, from which their
Repent-

SERM. Repentance and Obedience hath sprung,

III. is such, as they may securely rely on.
 And,

- I. *First*, I desire them to consider, that although the Gospel doth (almost in every Page of it) represent to us the Necessity of Repentance in *general*; yet, as to any particular Motive, from whence this Change of Mind and Manners must *necessarily* flow, it is altogether silent. Which seems to intimate this Truth, That if a Man be but sincerely and throughly Good, it matters not much out of what Principle he *first* became so: *Else* the Scripture, which so often and earnestly presses upon us the *one*, would have laid some Stress on the *other* also. It is said indeed that
- Luke x. 27. we must *Love the Lord our God with all our Heart, and with all our Soul, and with all our Mind, and with all our Strength*; that we must *walk in his Ways, and keep all his Commandments*; but it is no where determined, from what *Motive* this our *Love and Obedience* must

must *originally* spring, in order to find Acceptance with God. And therefore, where no express Directions are given, there the Divine Goodness seems to have indulged a Latitude. And why then should we make the *Way that leads to Eternal Life*, narrower, and the *Gates straiter*, than God himself appears to have made it? But,

SERM,
III.
~

2. It seems a little unequal and preposterous in these Persons, to lay so great a Stress on their *Fears* in *One* Respect, when they distrust them so much in *Another*. For the State of their Case is plainly this, — That by a *Dread* of Divine Vengeance they were at first scared from the Practice of Vice, and led into the Paths of Virtue: And it is the *same* religious Dread that now inclines them to suspect, and condemn themselves, on that very account. They *fear* they have not repented in that manner they ought to have done, because their *Repentance* was at first the Effect of their *Fear*; that is, they allow

S E R M. low the Suggestions of this Passion to

III. have a great deal of Weight in the latter Case, but none at all in the former.

Which is, at one and the same time, to pay too *much*, and too *little* Regard to it, and to *condemn ourselves* (as St. Paul elsewhere speaks) *in that thing we allow*. And the Judgments Men pass on their own Condition, from such inconsistent and confused Views as these, must needs be very uncertain, and unfit to be relied on. Nay,

Rom. xiv.
22.

3. It is no slight Token of a Man's being really and sincerely Good, and upon such Principles and Grounds as are well-pleasing to God, in that he *suspects* himself not to be so: Since we rarely find any but the best and most religious Minds, entertaining such little *Doubts*, and encouraging such nice *Scruples* as these. The bold presumptuous Sinner goes on *hardily* in his way; careless and fearless; without looking backward to the Point from whence he set out, or forward to the End of his Journey. *He repenteth not*
of

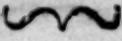
of his Wickedness (according to the De-^{serm}scription given of him by the Prophet ^{III.} *Jeremy*) saying, *What have I done?* *but turneth again to his Course, as the* ^{Jer. xviii.} *Horse rusheth into the Battle.* The ^{6.} *Hypocrite* on the other side, is as secure and well satisfied in *his* Way, having acted his Part so long, as to come at last to think it real, and to deceive even his own Heart, as well as the Eyes and Observations of others; and contenting himself with a demure Shew and Face of Religion, without any troublesome Doubts or Misgivings. But it is the good and conscientious Man chiefly, that is uneasy and dissatisfied with himself; always ready to condemn his own Imperfections, and to suspect his own Sincerity upon the slightest Occasions. He desires *so much* and earnestly to please God, that he can never think he pleases him *as much* as he ought to do. Every wry Step, by which he imagines himself to have declined from the Path of Duty, *af-frights* him when he reflects on it; every

SERM. every the least Obliquity in Thought,

III. Word, and Deed, seems considerable to him. So that these Suspicions and Godly Jealousies do, I say, usually abound *most* there, where there is least need of them; and it is (generally speaking) a very good Sign of a Man's loving God heartily, and in good earnest, when he begins to doubt, whether he loves him or no; and suspects even the best *Fruits* of Holiness, which shine in his Life and Practice, because he cannot look back with Satisfaction on the *Principle* of Fear, from whence they flowed. And therefore these very Scruples and Jealousies, which he thus cherishes, concerning the Goodness of his State, would really afford Matter of sound Comfort to him, if he had but Skill and Courage enough to make a right Use of them.

In order to convince him of which Truth, after premising these *general* Reflections, I proceed now, as I proposed, more *particularly* and *directly* to prove,

“ That

“ That a Fear of God’s Wrath and SERM.
“ of eternal Punishment, is a proper III.
“ and sufficient Motive to lead Men to 
“ Holiness.”

This will appear, if we consider,

1. The *Passion* itself, its *Rise*, *Nature*, and *Use*.

2. The natural *Apprehensions* we have of God, as a *Lawgiver*, *Judge*, and *Avenger*.

3. The *Depth* of Sin, into which some Men are plunged; and *out of* which nothing but Motives of Terror and Astonishment can possibly raise them.

1. The Passion of *Fear* is natural to us, and was given us by God for our Safety and Convenience; to warn us of impending Dangers, and to put us upon finding out proper Ways for avoiding them. When therefore this Passion imprints on our Minds a lively Sense of the Punishment due to Sin, of the Displeasure of God, of the mighty and insupportable Torments of Hell; and doth from hence excite and quicken

SERM. us into the Practice of Virtue; when

III. it doth this, I say, it doth its Duty,
and serves the very End for which it
was implanted in our Natures. Every
thing, that God made, is *good*; that
is, there is some good Use or other,
to which it may be put. And certainly
our *Fears* must then be of the greatest
Use to us, when they are turned
upon their most proper and important
Object, *Everlasting Burnings*. Do
we think, they were designed to admonish
us only of some *slighter* Harms,
which may reach our Bodies, or our
Fortunes? to keep us awake and alarmed
in relation to the Evils of *this*
Life alone, without extending to those
of *another*, as *certain* as these, and far
greater than these in *Degree* and *Duration*?
We may as well imagine, that
Reason was given us, merely as an help
towards managing the little Affairs of
this present World to our Advantage,
without any regard to what is *future*;
to make us wise and prudent in our
short and momentary Designs upon
Happiness,

Happiness, without assisting us in the SERM.
Discovery and Pursuit of eternal Feli- III.
city. Certainly, as Man is a Creature 
framed for *Religion*, so every one of his
Faculties and Affections was originally
ordained to the same End that *he* him-
self was; and *may* therefore to that pur-
pose be *usefully*, and is always most *fitly*
employed. His *Fears* therefore, and his
Hopes, and all the other Passions that
belong to the reasonable Nature, were
given him, as much for *religious* Uses,
as his very *Soul* and his *Being* were. So
that when the *Terrors of the Lord per-*
suade Men, a natural *End* is served by a
natural *Passion*; and, upon these Terms,
we may be sure, the *Author* of our *Na-*
ture will not refuse our Obedience.

2. This will *farther* appear, in the
next Place, from the natural *Apprehen-*
sions we have of *God*, when we consider
him as the *Object* of our *Duty* and Ser-
vice: It is plain, that we do then re-
present him to ourselves, as a *Law-*
giver; that is, as one who prescribes a
Rule to our Actions, and will punish

SERM. the *Breach* of it. We cannot conceive

III. him as giving a *Law* without a *Sanction*, that is, without representing him at the same time to ourselves, as *enforcing* that Law with a *Threat*, and *securing* the Observance of it by some *Penalty* annexed. This is the Method of all *Inferior* Legislators, and is from thence easily and naturally transferred by us to the *Supreme*. So that our *first* and most *immediate* Conceptions of God, by which we are excited to our Duty, involve in them this very *Motive* we are so apt to suspect; and we cannot propose to ourselves the One, without feeling in some measure the Power and Force of the Other.

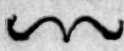
To observe God's Laws under a Prospect of *Reward*, is what many of those, who reject a Principle of *Dread*, will not deny to be a reasonable and sufficient *Inducement* to Virtue. Now, how our *desiring a Good* should make what we do on that account acceptable in the Eyes of God, and yet that very thing be unacceptable, when done to *avoid an Evil*;

Evil; how the *Hope* of Reward should be a *good* Motive, and yet the *Fear* of losing that Reward be an *ill* one, is hard to determine. It is on each side, the *Selfishness* of the Principle, and the Mixture of our own *Interest* with it, that seems to lessen its Worth. And I cannot see, how our *Interest* is less concerned in pursuing *Pleasure*, than in flying *Pain*.

Indeed, the noblest and most commendable Reason of our serving God is, our *Love* of him. God is *Love*, and he chiefly delights in those disinterested Duties which spring from *that* Principle. However, he hath been pleased to condescend to the *Weakness*, nay to the *Baseness* of our Natures, and to accept our bounden Duty and Service, upon much lower Terms. He hath thought fit to *allure*, and to *frighten* us into Obedience; and him that comes even *this way to him*, he will in no wise cast out.

3. To strengthen this Proof yet farther, let us, in the *third* place, take a

SERM. View of the State and Condition of

III.  profligate Sinners. We shall find it to be *such*, that nothing but *Terror* can any ways lay hold of them. Is it possible for a Man that is sunk into all manner of Vice and Impurity, to be struck on a sudden with the Beauty of Virtue and Goodness, with the Love of God, and of his infinite Perfections? Can he (do we think) recover himself, by reflecting on the Deformity and Turpitude of Sin, on the Dignity of his Nature, and of that divine Character and Resemblance which he bears? Alas! let Virtue be never so lovely, Goodness never so desirable; yet *He* hath no *Eyes* to *see* it, no *Heart* to *desire* it. He hath lost the Taste of every thing, but those very Delights, in which he indulges himself; and Reason is no longer Reason to him, than it pleads for his Enjoyments. Now what, I say, can possibly rouse such a Creature as this, so lost to all ingenuous Motives, but the Sense of divine Vengeance, and the Dread of eternal Punishments? The *Terrors of Hell* may

may still perhaps *persuade* him to con- SERM.
sider (for *Fear* will find an Entrance III.
where no other Passion can) but to all
Arguments besides he is perfectly impe-
netrable.

Indeed, *after* that the *Wrath* of God hath terrified him into Reflections on his wretched State, and into Resolutions of quitting it, there is room for *other* Motives to come in, and *finish* the Work thus *begun*; to improve his Contrition, and raise his Resentments, and build him up in the Practice of all manner of Holiness. But still the leading Step towards Repentance must, I say, proceed from his *Fear*; which therefore is a sure Foundation for all Penitents to build on, unless we can suppose that God ever leaves Men in *Sin*, without affording them any one proper Motive to stir them up to *Virtue*; an Opinion not easily to be entertained of infinite Goodness.

Why then should the pious *Christian* harbour any Doubts of this kind in his Breast? O, *why should his Soul be cast* Ps. xlii. 5:

SERM. down, and his Spirit disquieted within

III. *him?* There is no Room for Despondency of Mind in such a State as His; no Reason, why that Dread of Divine Wrath, which frightened him at *first* into the Ways of Virtue, should continue to haunt and pursue him *still*, now he is far advanced in them. The *only Fears*, which will be prejudicial to him, and which he ought to dismiss, are those concerning the *Validity* of his Repentance. His *other Fears* were agreeable to Nature, and Reason, and to those Methods, which the Divine Wisdom hath thought fit to make use of for reclaiming Sinners. To serve God out of *Love*, and *Love* only, without the least Mixture or Allay of any baser Principle, is the Privilege of Angels and blessed Spirits who live in the Presence of God. It will *hereafter* be the Reward of our having lived as became the Gospel, but it cannot be matter of strict Duty to us *now*. Lower and less noble Ends must influence us, while we are in this State of Imperfection:
Till

'Till that which is perfect is come, that SERM.
 which is in part need not, and cannot III.
 be done away. Therefore why is his Soul
 cast down, and why is his Spirit disquiet-
 ed within him?

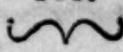
To all this perhaps the dejected *Chri-
 stian*, for whose sake I have entered on
 this Argument, will reply, That the
 Fear of eternal Punishment is indeed a
 proper and sufficient Motive to lead
 Men to Holiness, if it be *such* a Fear
 of God's Power and Justice, as is
 sweetly allayed and tempered by a Sense
 of his Goodness; that is, if it be an
Evangelic and *Filial* Fear, composed
 of an equal Mixture of Awe and De-
 light, of Love and Reverence; for to
 such a Fear as this the most eminent
 Saints of God were no Strangers, since
 they *served the Lord with Fear* (as good
David speaks) *and rejoiced before him*
with Reverence.

But alas! *His* is altogether a *Legal*
 and a *Servile* Fear; a fullen, gloomy
 Passion, without the least Mixture of
 any thing Joyous and Delightful; a

SERM. mere Dread of Omnipotence, armed

III. with Vengeance, which presents the Rod to him as lifted up, and makes him tremble at the Sight of it; and forces him on towards his Duty, *without*, and *against* Inclination, merely as Beasts of Sacrifice are dragged to the Horns of the Altar. This is *his* wretched Case; no Glimpse of Light appears in any Corner of his Soul; no comfortable Reflections on the Goodness and Mercy of God shine inwardly upon him; but the Face of his Mind is all covered with Darkness, Distrust, and Horror. And how can the Services that flow from such a Temper as *this*, be acceptable to that God, who is all Love and Light, and is pleased only with a willing Mind, and a *cheerful Giver*? This is the sad Account which some Men give of themselves without Cause. To rectify it, let them consider,

Ist. Hath this Principle, which they thus blame, done the Work of a better? Hath it made them Charitable, Humble, Temperate, Devout? Hath it

it enabled them to purify themselves SERM.
 from all Spot and Blemish, and to ad- III.
 orn the Doctrine of their God and Sa- 
 viour in all Things? If it hath, they Tit. ii. 10.

may put what Odious Names upon it,
 and dress it up in what frightful Shapes
 they please; but it is certainly such a
 Principle, as will bear the Test, and, if
 they continue to be directed by it, will
 at last carry them to Heaven. Be not
 deceived, *He that doth Righteousness, is* 1 John iii.
Righteous; and as such, shall receive a 7th.

Recompence at the great Day of Ac-
 count, though he became so upon the
 lowest and least valuable Considerations:
 The Meanness of the Motive, which
 induced him to Obey, shall not rob him
 of the Rewards which are due to Obe-
 dience. And therefore the Distinction
 between a *Legal* and *Servile* Fear is
 here mistaken and misapplied. For a
Servile Fear (in the true Notion of it)
 is *such* a Dread of divine Vengeance, as
 hath no saving Influence upon Mens
 Lives and Conversations; *such* as Male-
 factors are seized with, when under the
 Sentence

S E R M. Sentence of Execution, and without

III. Hopes of escaping it; *such* as Ill Men
 feel, who go on obstinately in their Ill
 Courses, *notwithstanding it*; and *such*,
 under which the Devils themselves bow
 and tremble, though without altering
 in the least their diabolical Natures by
 the Means of it. But this is far from
 being the Case of that Man, who *works*
out his own Salvation with Fear and
Trembling: And therefore, we miscall
such Fears as these, when we term
 them *Servile*: For that is always in the
 Accounts of right Reason, and will be
 esteemed in the Sight of God, a true
Filial Fear, which works by a true
Filial Obedience. But,

2^{dly} It is *farther* probable, that these
 melancholy Persons do represent their
 own inward Sense of Things worse
 than it deserves; and persuade them-
 selves into an Opinion, that they Love
 God less, and Dread him more than
 perhaps they really do. For (as I hint-
 ed at the Beginning of this Discourse)
 it is scarce conceivable that any Men,
 who

who are not sincerely good, should dis-
 quiet themselves with such Scruples a-
 bout the Ends and Motives which in-
 clined them to Goodness. It is their
 Fear of not Loving God as *much* as
 they *ought* to do, which makes them
 apprehend that they do not love him
at all. And therefore, instead of turn-
 ing their Eyes *inwardly* upon the Ideas,
 which they have lodged in their fright-
 ful Imagination, let them direct them
 upon the *outward* Effects of their Fears;
 instead of puzzling themselves about the
 true *Principle* of Holiness, let them
 take a comfortable Prospect of the ge-
 nuine *Fruits* of it, which abound in
 their Life and Practice. And then their
 Doubts will all disappear, their Scruples
 will vanish; and they will be satisfied,
 that the Love of God *bath* that Place
 which it *ought* to have in their Hearts,
 in as much as they *Obey* him: *For in*
this we know that we love God, if we
keep his Commandments. But,

S E R M.

III.

John. xiv.
15.

3^{dly} and *lastly*, Let the Men who
 are under these Apprehensions, make a
 right

SERM. right Use of them ; not disturb and ter-

III. rify themselves with such Thoughts,
 but take Occasion from thence to gain
 Ground upon themselves, and to ad-
 vance faster in the Ways of Religion;
 and to excite in their Hearts such a fer-
 vent and exalted Love of God, as shall
 leave no Room for any Doubts and Mis-
 givings. It is true, that *perfect Love*
casteth out Fear ; but such a Degree of
 Divine Love is scarce attainable here :
 However, we may aspire and approach
 still nearer and nearer towards this Per-
 fection. How much soever we have
 conquered our *Dread* of God, and im-
 proved our *Love* of him, we may go on
 still to dread him less, and to love him

Ephes. iii. more, 'till we come at last to be *rooted*
 17, 18, 19. *and grounded in Love, and be able to*
comprehend, with all Saints, what is the
Breadth, and Length, and Depth, and
Height, and to know the Love of Christ,
which passeth Knowledge.

To Him, together with the Father,
and the Holy Ghost, &c.

T H E

THE
T E R R O R S
OF
CONSCIENCE.

The Terrors of Conscience.

A
S E R M O N

Preached at

St. *P A U L*'s

Before the

L O R D M A Y O R,

May 30. 1703.

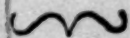
MATTH. xiv. 1, 2, 3.

At that Time Herod the Tetrarch heard of the Fame of Jesus, and said unto his Servants, This is John the Baptist, He is risen from the Dead; and therefore mighty Works do shew forth themselves in him. For Herod had laid hold on John, and bound him, and put him in Prison, &c.

THE Wicked (says the Prophet) are
like the troubled Sea, when it cannot rest, whose Waters cast up Mire and
Dirt.

S E R M.

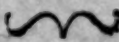
IV.



If. lvii. 20.

S E R M. *Dirt.* That is, Men of flagitious Lives

IV. are subject to great Uneasiness: Whatever Calm and Repose of Mind they may seem for a Season to enjoy, yet anon, a quick and pungent Sense of Guilt (awakened by some Accident) rises like a Whirlwind, ruffles and disquiets them throughout, and turns up to open View, from the very Bottom of their Consciences, all the Filth and Impurity which had settled itself there. A Truth, of which there is not, perhaps, in the whole Book of God, a more apt and lively Instance, than that which the Passage I have read from the Evangelist sets before us. The crying Guilt of *John* the Baptist's Blood sat but ill, no doubt, on the Conscience of *Herod*, from the Moment of his spilling it. However, his inward Anguish and Remorse was stifled and kept under for a time, by the Splendor and Luxury in which he lived, 'till he *heard of the Fame of Jesus*; and then his Heart smote him, at the Remembrance of the Inhuman Treatment he had given to such
such

such another Just and Good Man; and S E R M.
 wrung from him a Confession of what IV.
 he felt, by what he uttered on that 

*Occasion. He said unto his Servants,
 This is John the Baptist! He is risen
 from the Dead! and therefore mighty
 Works do shew forth themselves in him.*

There could not be a wilder Imagina-
 tion than this, or which more betrayed
 the Agony and Confusion of Thought,
 under which he laboured. He had
 often heard *John* the Baptist preach,
 and must have known that the Drift of
 all his Sermons was, to prepare the *Jews*
 for the Reception of a Prophet, *migh-*
tier than Him, and whose Shoes he was
not worthy to bear. Upon the Arrival
 of that Prophet, soon afterwards, *He-*
rod's frightened Conscience gives him no
 Leisure to recollect what his Messenger
 had said; but immediately suggests to
 him, That this was the murdered *Bap-*
tist himself! *Herod*, as appears from
 History, was, though *Circumcised*, lit-
 tle better than an *Heathen* in his Prin-
 ciples and Practices; or, if sincerely a

S E R M. *Jew*, was, at most, but of the Sect of
 I V. the *Sadducees*, who said, there was no
 Resurrection; and yet, under the pre-
 Matt. xxii sent Pangs and Terrors of his Guilt, he
 23. imagines, that *John* was risen from the
 Dead, on purpose to reprove him. It
 was the *Baptist's* distinguishing Charac-
 Joh. x. 41. ter, that he *did no Miracles*, nor pre-
 tended to the Power of doing them;
 and yet even from hence the disturbed
 Mind of *Herod* concludes, that it must
 be *He*, because *mighty Works* did shew
 forth themselves in him. And so great
 was his Consternation and Surprize,
 that it broke out before Those, who
 should least have been Witnesses of it:
 For he Whispers not his guilty Fears
 to a Bosom Friend, to the Partner of
 his Crime, and of his Bed; but forgets
 his high State and Character, and de-
 clares them to his very *Servants*. Surely
 nothing can be more just and apposite
 than the Allusion of the Prophet, in
 respect to this wicked Tetrarch; He is
 like the troubled Sea, when it cannot
 rest, whose Waters cast up Mire and
 Dirt.

Dirt. And such is every one, that sins S E R M.
with an high Hand, against the clear IV.
Light of his Conscience: Although he
may resist the Checks of it at first, yet
he will be sure to feel the Lashes and
Reproaches of it afterwards. The A-
venging Principle within us will cer-
tainly do *Its* Duty, upon any eminent
Breach of *Ours*; and make every fla-
grant Act of Wickedness, even in this
Life, a Punishment to itself.

With this general Proposition the
particular Instance of the Text (duly
opened and considered) will furnish us:
and this Proposition therefore I now
purpose, by God's Blessing, to handle
and enforce; and, in order to fix a
due, lively, and lasting Sense of it upon
our Minds, I shall, in what follows,
consider *Conscience*, not as a mere *In-*
tellectual Light, or *Informing Faculty*,
a *Dictate* of the *Practical Understand-*
ing (as the Phrase of the Schools is)
which Directs, Admonishes, and Influ-
ences us, in what we *are to do*; but
as it acts *back* upon the Soul by a

S E R M.

IV.

Reflection on what we *have done*; and is, by that Means, the Source and Cause of all that Joy, or Dejection of Mind, of those internal Sensations (if I may so speak) of Pleasure or Pain, which attend the Practice of great Virtues or great Vices; and begin that Heaven, and that Hell in us here, which will be our Sure and Eternal Portion hereafter.

Prov. xx.
27. *The Spirit* (or Conscience) *of Man is the Candle of the Lord*, which not only *discovers* to us, by its Light, wherein our Duty consists; but *revives* also, and *cheers* us with its bright Beams, when we do *well*; and, when we do *ill*, is as a *burning Flame*, to scorch, and consume us.

As such, I shall consider it in my present Discourse: Wherein,

- I. *First*, I shall endeavour to Illustrate this plain but weighty Truth (for indeed it needs *Illustration* only, and not *Proof*) by some Considerations drawn from *Scripture*, *Reason*, and *Experience*.

Secondly,

The Terrors of Conscience.

101

SERM.

IV.

II.

Secondly, I shall account for a particular and pressing *Difficulty*, that seems to attend the Proof of it. And,

Thirdly and lastly, I shall apply it to (the proper Object of *all* our Admonitions from the Pulpit, but most especially of *this*) the *Hearts* and *Consciences* of the Hearers. III.

First, I am to illustrate this Truth by some Considerations drawn from Scripture, Reason, and Experience. I.

That *Guilt* and *Anguish* are inseparable, and that the Punishment of a Man's Sin begins always from Himself, and from his own Reflections, is a Truth every where supposed, appealed to, and inculcated in *Scripture*. The Consequence of the *first* Sin that was ever committed in the World, is *there* said to have been, that our offending Parents *perceived* their own Nakedness, and *fled* from the Presence of God: that is, a conscious *Shame* and

SERM. *Fear* succeeded in the Room of lost

IV. Innocence; and the *Presages* of their

own Minds, those *Auguria Pænæ futuræ* (of which even the Heathen Moralists speak) anticipated the Sentence of Divine Vengeance. In relation to

this Office of Conscience it is, that the inspired Writers speak of it (in Terms borrowed from the awful Solemnities of Human Judicatories) as *bearing Wit-*

Rom. ii.
15.

ness against us, as *Accusing, or Excusing, Judging, and Condemning* us. And the Prophet therefore adds this Woe to the other Menaces, which he had denounced on a disobedient and pro-

Jer. ii. 19.

fligate People, that *their own Wickedness should correct them, and their Backsliding should reprove them*: A Correction so severe and terrible, that *Solomon* balancing the Outward Afflictions of Life, and Bodily Pains, with the Inward Regrets and Torments of a guilty Mind, pronounces the former of these to be Light and Tolerable in

Prov. xviii.
14.

comparison of the latter: *The Spirit of a Man* (says he) *will sustain his Infirmities*;

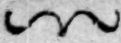
firmities ; but a wounded Spirit who SERM.
can bear? *Isaiab* describes the dismal IV.

Reflections, and foreboding Thoughts
that harbour in such a Breast, after
this Manner: *The Sinners of Sion are* Is. xxiii.
afraid, Fearfulness hath surprized the 14.

*Hypocrites: Who shall dwell with de-
vouring Flames? Who shall dwell with
everlasting Burnings?* But no Part of
Scripture gives us so lively an Account
of this inward Scene of Dejection and
Horror, as the *Psalms* of Penitent *Da-
vid*: In one of them, particularly, he
thus complains: *Mine Iniquities are* Pf. xxxviii.

*gone over my Head, as an heavy Bur-
then; they are too heavy for me. I
am feeble and sore broken, I have roar-
ed, by reason of the Disquietness of my
Heart. I am troubled, I am bowed
down greatly; I go mourning all the
Day long. My Heart panteth, my
Strength faileth me; and as for the
Light of mine Eyes, it is also gone
from me. For thine Arrows stick fast
in me, and thy Hand presseth me sore:
There is no Soundness in my Flesh, be-*

SERM. *cause of thine Anger; neither is there*

IV. *any Rest in my Bones, because of my*
 *Sin.*

This is the Expressive Language of Holy Writ, when it would set out to us the Disorders and Uneasiness of a guilty self-condemning Mind. And,

2. There is nothing in these Representations *particular* to the *Times* and *Persons*, on which they point; nothing but what happens alike to *all* Men in *like* Cases; and is the genuine and necessary Result of offending against the Light of our Consciences: Nor is it possible indeed in the Nature of the Thing, that Matters should be otherwise. It is the Way, in which Guilt doth and must always operate. For *Moral* Evil can no more be committed, than *Natural* Evil can be suffered, without Anguish and Disquiet: Whatever doth Violence to the plain Dictates of our Reason concerning Virtue and Vice, Duty and Sin, will as certainly discompose and afflict our Thoughts, as a Wound will raise a Smart

Smart in the Flesh that receives it. SERM.
Good and Evil, whether *Natural* or IV.
Moral, are but other Words for *Plea-*
sure and *Pain*, Delight and Uneasi-
ness: At least, tho' they may be di-
stinguished in the *Notion*, yet are they
not to be separated in *Reality*; but the
one of them, wherever it is, will con-
stantly and uniformly excite and pro-
duce the other. *Pain* and *Pleasure*
are the Springs of all human Actions,
the great Engines, by which the wise
Author of our Natures governs and
steers them to the Purposes, for which
he ordained them. By *these*, annexed
to the Perception of Good and Evil,
he inclines us powerfully to pursue the
one, and to avoid the other; to pur-
sue *natural Good*, and to avoid *natu-
ral Evil*, by delightful or uneasy Sen-
sations, that immediately affect the
Body; to pursue *moral Good*, and to
avoid *moral Evil*, by pleasing or pain-
ful Impressions made on the *Mind*.
From hence it is, that we so readily
choose or refuse, do or forbear every
thing

SERM. thing that is profitable or noxious to
 IV. us, and requisite to preserve or perfect
 ~~~~~ our Beings. And because it is an *End*  
 of far greater Importance, and more  
 worthy of our All-wise Creator's Care,  
 to secure the Integrity of our *moral*,  
 than of our *natural* Perfections; there-  
 fore he hath made the Pleasures and  
 Pains, subservient to this purpose, more  
 extensive and durable; so that the in-  
 ward Complacency we find in acting  
 reasonably and virtuously, and the Dis-  
 quiet we feel from vicious Choices and  
 Pursuits, is protracted beyond the Acts  
 themselves, from whence it arose; and  
 renewed often upon our Souls, by dis-  
 tant *Reflections*; whereas the Pleasures  
 and Pains, attending the Perceptions  
 of natural Good and Evil, are bound-  
 ed within a narrower Compass, and  
 do seldom stay long, or return with  
 any Force upon the Mind, after a Re-  
 moval of the Objects that occasioned  
 them.

Hence then the Satisfactions, or Stings  
 of Conscience severally arise: They are  
 the

the Sanctions, as it were, and Enforce-<sup>SERM.</sup>  
ments of that eternal Law of Good <sup>IV.</sup>  
and Evil, to which we are subjected;  
the natural Rewards and Punishments  
originally annexed to the Observance, or  
Breach of that Law by the great Pro-  
mulger of it; and which being thus  
*joined and twisted together by God*, can  
scarce by any Arts, Endeavours, or  
Practices of Men be *put asunder*. The  
Prophet therefore explains Good and  
Evil, by Sweet and Bitter. *Woe be to* Isa. v. 20.  
*them (says he) that call Evil Good, and*  
*Good Evil! that put Bitter for Sweet,*  
*and Sweet for Bitter!* Implying, that  
the former of these do as naturally and  
sensibly affect the Soul, as the latter do  
the Palate; and leave as grateful, or  
displeasing a Relish behind them. But,  
3. There is no need of *Arguments*,  
to evince this Truth; the universal  
*Experience* and *Feeling* of Mankind  
bears Witness to it. For say, did ever  
any of you break the Power of a dar-  
ling Lust, resist a pressing Temptation,  
or

SERM. or perform any Act of a conspicuous

IV.

and distinguishing Virtue, but that you found it soon turn to account to you?

Did not your Minds swell with a secret Satisfaction, at the Moment when you were doing it? And was not a Reflection upon it afterwards always sweet

Prov. iii. 8. and refreshing? *Health to your Navel, and Marrow to your Bones?* On the

contrary, did you ever indulge a Criminal Appetite, or allow yourself sedately in any Practice which you knew to be unlawful, but that you felt an inward Struggle, and strong Reluctances of Mind before the Attempt, and bitter Pangs of Remorse attending it? Though no Eye saw what you did, and you were sure that no Mortal could discover it; did not Shame and Confusion secretly lay hold of you?

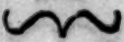
Was not your own *Conscience* instead of a thousand Witnesses to you? Did

Ezek. xx.  
35.

it not *plead with you Face to Face*, as it were, and upbraid you with your Backslidings? Have not some of you, perhaps, at this Instant, a sensible Ex-

perience



perience of the Truth which I am pre- SERM.  
sing upon you? Do you not feel the IV.  
Operation of that powerful Principle,   
of which I am discoursing? Is not the  
Memory of some of your past Sins  
even now present to you? And are  
not your Minds stung with some De-  
gree of that Regret and Uneasiness,  
which followed upon the first Com-  
mission of them? And do you not dis-  
cover what passes within you, by a more  
than ordinary Attention, Seriousness,  
and Silence; and even by an Endeavour  
to throw off these visible Marks of Con-  
cern, into which you are surprised, as  
soon as they are observed?

The jolly and voluptuous Livers, the  
Men who set up for Freedom of  
Thought, and for disengaging themselves  
from the Prejudices of Education and  
superstitious Opinions, may pretend to  
dispute this Truth, and perhaps, in the  
Gaiety of their Hearts, may venture  
even to deride it: But they cannot,  
however, get rid of their inward Con-  
victions of it; they must feel it some-  
times

SERM. times, though they will not own it.

IV.

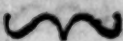
There is no Possibility of reasoning ourselves out of our own Experience, or of laughing down a Principle woven so closely into the Make and Frame of our Natures. Notwithstanding our Endeavours to conceal and stifle it, it will break out sometimes, and discover itself to a careful Observer, through all our Pretences and Disguises; for even *in the midst of such a Laughter, the Heart is sorrowful:* and as the Beginning of that *Mirth* was Folly, so the End of it is always *Heaviness*.

Prov. xiii.

14.

Look upon one of these Men, who would be thought to have made his ill Practices and ill Principles perfectly consistent; to have shaken off all Regard to the Dictates of his own Mind concerning Good and Evil, and to have gotten above the Reproofs of his Conscience; and you will find a thousand Things, in his Actions and Discourses, testifying against him, that *he deceiveth himself*, and that *the Truth is not in him*.

John i. 8.

*him.* If he be indeed, as he pretends, SERM.  
at ease in his Enjoyments, from whence IV.  
come those Disorders and Unevenness   
in his Life and Conduct; those Vicis-  
situdes of good and bad Humour,  
Mirth and Thoughtfulness; that per-  
petual Pursuit of little, mean, insipid  
Amusements; that restless Desire of  
changing the Scene, and the Objects of  
his Pleasures; those sudden Eruptions  
of Passion and Rage upon the least Dis-  
appointments? Certainly, all is not  
right within; or else there would be  
a greater Calm, and Serenity without:  
If his Mind were not in an unnatural  
Situation, and under contrary Influ-  
ences, it would not be thus tossed and  
disquieted. For what Reason doth he  
contrive for himself such a Chain and  
Succession of Entertainments; and take  
care to be delivered over from one Fol-  
ly, one Diversion, to another, without  
Intermission? Why, but because he  
dreads to leave any void Spaces of Life  
unfilled, lest *Conscience* should find  
Work for his Mind at those Intervals?  
He



SERM. He hath no way to fence against guilt-

IV. ty Reflections, but by stopping up all  
 the Avenues at which they might enter. Hence, his strong Addi-  
 ction to Company, his Aversion to Darknefs and Solitude; which recollect the Thoughts, and turn the Mind inward upon itself, by shutting out external Objects and Impressions. It is not, because the Pleasures of Society are always new and grateful to him, that he pursues them thus keenly; for they soon lose their Relish, and grow flat and insipid, by Repetition. They are not his Choice, but his Refuge; for the Truth is, he dares not long converse with himself, and with his own Thoughts; and the worst Company in the World is better to him, than that of a *reproving Conscience*.

A lively and late Proof of this we had in a certain Writer, who set up for delivering Men from these vain fantastick Terrors; and was, on that Account, for a Season much read and applauded. But it is plain, that he  
 could

could not work that Effect in *himself*, SERM.  
which he pretended to work in *others*: IV.

For his Books manifestly shew, that  
his Mind was over-run with gloomy  
and terrible Ideas of Dominion and  
Power; and that he wrote in a per-  
petual Fright against those very Prin-  
ciples, which he pretended to contra-  
dict and deride: And such as knew  
his Conversation well, have assured us,  
that nothing was so dreadful to him,  
as to be in the Dark, and to give his  
natural Fears an Opportunity of re-  
coiling upon him. That he was ti-  
morous to an Excess, is certain; he  
himself owns it, in the Account which  
he wrote of himself, and which is in  
every one's Hands: But he did not care  
to own the true Reason of it, and  
therefore lays it upon a mighty Fright,  
which seized his Mother, when the  
*Spaniards* attempted their famous In-  
vasion, in the Year 1588. the Year in  
which he was born. The more pro-  
bable Account of it is, that it natural-  
ly sprung from his own Conduct and

S E R M. Method of Thinking. He had been

IV. endeavouring all his Life-time, to get rid of those Religious Principles, under which he was carefully educated by his Father (a Divine of the Church of *England*) and to set up for a new System and Sect, which was to be built upon the Ruins of all those Truths, that were then, and had ever been held sacred by the best and wisest of Men. It was Vanity pushed him on to this Attempt, but he could not compass it. He was able, here and there, to delude a superficial Thinker with his new Terms and Reasonings: But the hardest Task of all was, thoroughly to deceive himself. His *Understanding* could not be compleatly imposed upon, even by its own Artifices; and his *Conscience*, every now and then, got the better of him in the Struggle; so he lived in a perpetual Suspicion and Dread of the Reality of those Truths, which he represented as Figments; and, while he made Sport with that *Kingdom of Darknefs* (as he loved to call another World)



World) trembled, in good earnest, at SERM.  
the Thought of it. IV.

*Tiberius*, that compleat Pattern of Wickedness and Tyranny, had taken as much Pains to conquer these Fears as any Man, and had as many Helps and Advantages towards it, from great Splendour and Power, and a perpetual Succession of new Business, and new Pleasures; and yet, as great a Master of the Art of Diffimulation as he was, he could not dissemble the inward Sense of his Guilt, nor prevent the open Eruptions of it upon very improper Occasions. Witness that *Letter*, which he wrote to the Senate from his impure Retreatment at *Capreae*. *Tacitus* has preserved the first Lines of it; and there cannot be a livelier Image of a Mind filled with wild Distraction and Despair, than what they afford us: *Quid scribam Vobis, P. C. aut quomodo scribam, aut quid omnino non scribam hoc tempore, Dii me Deæque pejus perdant, quàm perire quotidie sentio, si scio!* That is, "What, or how, at this  
12 "Time,

SERM. "Time, I shall write to you, Fathers

IV. "of the Senate, or what indeed I shall

~ "not write to you, may all the Powers of Heaven confound me yet worse than they have already done, if I know, or can imagine!" And *his*

Observation upon it is well worthy of *ours*, and very apposite to our present purpose: "In this manner (says he)

"was this Emperor punished by a Reflection on his own infamous Life

"and Guilt; nor was it in vain that

"the greatest Master of Wisdom [he

"means *Plato*] affirmed, that were

"the Breast of Tyrants once laid open

"to our View, we should see there

"nothing but ghastly Wounds and

"Bruises; the Consciousness of their

"own Cruelty, Lewdness, and ill Con-

"duct, leaving as deep and bloody

"Prints on their Minds, as the Strokes

"of the Scourge do on the Back of

"a Slave. *Tiberius* (adds he) con-

"fessed as much, when he uttered these

"Words; nor could his high Stati-

"on, or even Privacy and Retirement

"itself

“ itself hinder him from discovering  
“ to all the World the inward Ago-  
“ nies and Torments, under which he  
“ laboured.” Thus that excellent Hi-  
storian\*.

S E R M.

IV.

Believe it, the Tales of Ghosts and Spectres were not (as is commonly said) the mere Inventions of designing Men to keep weak Minds in awe; nor the Products only of a religious Fear, degenerated into Melancholy and Superstition; but wicked Men, haunted with a Sense of their own Guilt (as the cruel Tetrarch here in the Text, with the Baptist's Murder) were used to affright themselves with such Phantoms as these, and often mistook strong and terrible Imaginations for real Apparitions. Thus, I am sure, the Author of the Book of *Wisdom* very naturally accounts for them in his 17<sup>th</sup> Chapter; out of which I shall recite a large Passage, very apposite to the Point which

\* About this Passage of *Tiberius*, see *Hooker's* excellent Reflections, p. 367, 368.



SERM. we are now handling. He is there

IV. with great Elegance, describing that  
panick Fear, which seized the impious *Ægyptians*, when (as he speaks) *they were fettered with the Bonds of a long Night, and shut up in their Houses, the Prisoners of Darknes.* Then, says he, *they who had supposed that they lay hid in their secret Sins, were horribly astonished and troubled with strange Sights. For neither might the Corner that held them, keep them from Fear; but Noises, as of Waters falling down, sounded about them, and sad Visions appeared unto them with heavy Countenances. And they that promised to drive away Terrors and Troubles from a sick Soul (the Men, we may suppose, who set up for confounding the Notions of Good and Evil, and ridiculing Conscience) were sick themselves of Fear worthy to be laughed at. For though no terrible Thing did affright them, yet being scared by Beasts that passed by, and Hissing of Serpents, they died for Fear; refusing to look upon the Air, which on*

*no Side could be avoided. For Wicked-* SERM.  
*ness* (as he concludes) *condemned by its* IV.  
*own Witness, is very timorous; and, be-*  
*ing pressed with Conscience, always fore-*  
*casteth grievous Things!*

I know it will be said, that though  
this be *often*, yet it is not *always* the  
Case; since we have now and then In-  
stances of Men, who lead very flagi-  
tious Lives, and yet feel not any of  
these Qualms or Guirds of *Conscience*;  
but do, in all appearance, *live easily*,  
and sometimes even *die calmly*. Which  
could not be (say the Objectors) if the  
Principle of *Conscience*, and the con-  
demning Power of it were *natural* to  
Man; for it would then act like other  
natural Principles, universally, and with-  
out Exception. Having hitherto there-  
fore illustrated this Truth by Obser-  
vations drawn from *Scripture, Reason,*  
and *Experience*; I now proceed on  
my

*Second general Head, To account* II.  
*for this Difficulty, which attends the*  
*Proof of it. In order to it,*

I 4

I. I ob-

SERM.

IV.

1. I observe, that we are deceived often in the Judgments we pass on such Occasions. In our common Intercourse with the World, we see only the *Outside* and Surface, as it were, of Mens Actions, but cannot tell how it is with them *Inwardly*, and at the Bottom. We frame our Opinions of them from what passes in Conversation and publick Places, where they may be upon their Guard, acting a Part, and studying Appearances. The Hypocrite in Perfection will put on the Mask so artificially, that it shall seem to be real and natural. Decency, and a Desire of Esteem shall enable Men to cover great Passions and Frailties, which nevertheless fit very close to them, and, as soon as those Restraints are taken off, break out with Freedom. We have read of those, who have been endued with such a Constancy and Firmness of Temper, as even to endure the Rack, and to appear composed under the Pains of it, without owning their Crime, or declaring their Accomplices.



plices. And in like manner, the Torments of a guilty *Conscience* may sometimes be borne and dissembled. I observe,

S E R M.

IV.

2. That the Disorders and Reprehensions of *Conscience* are not a *continued*, but an *intermitting* Disease; returning upon the Mind by Fits, and at particular Seasons only; in the Intervals of which the Patient shall have seeming Health, and real Ease. The Eruptions of burning Mountains are not *perpetual*, nor doth even the Smoak itself ascend *always* from the Tops of them; but though the Seeds of Fire lodged in their Caverns may be stifled and suppressed for a Time, yet anon they gather Strength, and break out again, with a Rage great in Proportion to its Discontinuance. 'Tis by Accidents and Occasions chiefly that the Power of this Principle is called forth into Act; by a sudden ill Turn of Fortune, or a Fit of Sicknes, or our Observation of some remarkable Instance of divine Vengeance, which hath  
over-

SERM. overtaken other Men in like Cases.

IV.

Even *Herod* was not always under the Paroxysm described in the Text, but surprized into it unawares, by his *bearing of the Fame of Jesus*; and then his Heart smote him at the Remembrance of the inhuman Treatment he had given to such another just and good Person, and filled his Mind anew with forgotten Horrors. We cannot therefore, from a present Calm of Thought, know, either how it *hath* been with a Man heretofore, or how it *shall* be with him hereafter; but *may* easily in such Cases, and *do* often judge *wrong* Judgment; saying, *Peace, Peace, where there is no Peace*, but a *Truce* only; and where it will appear, that there *was* none, whenever Affliction ruffles a Man's Soul, or a Death-bed rouzes him:

*Veræ tum Voces Pectore ab imo*

*Erumpunt, atque eripitur Persona, manet Res:*

*Then* (and sometimes not 'till then) all Masks and Disguises are thrown off, and the Mind appears naked and unguarded to itself and others.

Ask

Ask those who attend the Sick, and help to prepare them for their Passage into another World; ask them, I say, and they will tell you, how many Instances they have met with of Men, who seem to have been given up to a Spirit of Insensibility and Slumber, and have accordingly *slept* on for a long time, and *taken their Rest*; and yet have in their last Moments been all at once sufficiently awakened: What inexpressible Agonies and Horrors they have found upon the Minds of dying despairing Sinners, who thought themselves secure against such Attacks, and believed that the clamorous Principle within them was wholly silenced; but upon the *near* Prospect of another World, and which made no Impression on them at a *Distance*, have changed their Sentiments, and dropped their false Confidence; have seen their Guilt, and dreaded their Danger, when it was too late perhaps to think of deploring the one, or escaping the other.

After all, it must be owned,

3. That

S E R M.

IV.



SERM. 3. That there are now and then *In-*  
 stances of Men, who have gone through  
 even this *last* Tryal unshaken; and, af-  
 ter leading very dissolute *Lives*, have  
 yet *died hard*, as the Phrase is, without  
 any seeming Concern for what was  
 passed, or Dread of what was to fol-  
 low. Whenever such an *Effect* hap-  
 pens, it is owing to one or more of  
 these *Causes*; either to ill *Principles*  
 early and deeply imbibed, or to a cer-  
 tain Obstinacy and Sullenness of *Tem-*  
*per* peculiar to some Men; or lastly,  
 either to a natural or acquired *Stupi-*  
*dity*. If a Man begins *betimes* with him-  
 self, and takes *Pains* to vitiate his  
 Mind with lewd Principles, and lives  
*long* in the Profession of them, he may  
 at last root and rivet them so fast, 'till  
 scarce any Application whatsoever is  
 able to loosen them; and 'till the na-  
 tural Sentiments of his *Conscience* are  
 even choaked and stifled by the Means  
 of them.

A false Firmness and Resolution, join-  
 ed with a Shame of unsaying and un-  
 doing

doing all a Man hath said and done before, may possibly carry him headlong on to his Death, without *owning*, or perhaps even *seeing* his Danger. Gross and heavy Minds, unimproved by Education and Instruction, have at length arrived at such a Degree of *Stupidity*, as to think of nothing *beyond* this World, nor of any Thing *in* it, but what immediately affects their *Senses*. And even Spirits more refined may, by a perpetual and total Immersion in bodily Pleasures, arrive at last at the same Degree of *Insensibility*. In such Cases and by the Help of such Qualities as these, it is *possible*, I grant, and *sometimes* happens, that Men have gone *out* of the World, as they lived in it, defying *Conscience*, and the Power of it, and deriding the Flames of *Hell*, 'till they were in the Midst of them. But these are *rare* Instances, and of no Force therefore, when opposed to the general Conviction and Feeling of Mankind upon the same Occasions. They prove only that there are Monsters in  
the

SERM.

IV.

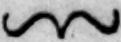
SERM. the *Moral*, as well as the *Natural*

IV. World, which make nothing against the settled Laws, and regular Course of either. To argue against the innate and pungent Reflections of *Conscience* from some Mens want of them, is, as if one should attempt to prove, that *Man* is not a *reasonable* Creature, because some Men are born *Naturals*, and others by too great an Intention of Thought, or by brutal Excesses, have lost the *Use* of their *Reason*. For if the Light of *Reason* may itself be extinguished, much more may the Voice of *Conscience* be drowned; which being a practical Principle, is perpetually warred upon by our Lusts, and Passions, and sinful Habits; whereas the other being a more speculative Power, hath no Contrary in the Mind of Man to struggle with.

But I forbear, since there remains yet the

III. *Third* and last Part of my Task,  
To apply what hath been said to the  
proper



proper Object of *All* our Admonitions S E R M.  
from the Pulpit (and particularly of IV.  
*This*) the *Hearts* and *Consciences* of the   
Hearers.

Since therefore the wise Author of our Natures hath so contrived them, that Guilt is naturally, and almost necessarily attended with Trouble and Uneasiness, let us even from hence be persuaded to preserve the Purity, that we may preserve the Peace and Tranquillity of our Minds. For *Pleasure's* Sake, let us abstain from all *criminal* Pleasures and Pollutions; because the racking Pains of Guilt, duly awakened, are really an Overbalance to the greatest sensual Gratifications. The Charms of Vice (how tempting soever they may seem to be) are by no Means equivalent to the inward Remorse and Trouble, and the tormenting Reflections which attend it; which always keep Pace with our Guilt, and are proportioned to the Greatness and Daringness of our Crimes: For *mighty Sinners* Wisd. vi. 6.  
(here as well as hereafter) *shall be*  
*mightily*

SERM. *mightily tormented.* Sins of Omission,

IV. Infirmity, and Surprize there will be ;  
even the just Man falls *seven Times a Day* by them, and rises again from them with Strength and Chearfulness to his Duty ; but let us be sure carefully to guard against all such *flagrant* Enormities, as do *Violence* to the first and plainest Dictates of our *Reason*, and *overbear* the strongest Impulses of our *Conscience* ; for these will certainly leave a Wound behind them, which we shall find it hard to bear, and harder, much harder to cure. Let no Temptation, no Interest, no Influence whatsoever sway us to do any Thing contrary to the Suggestions of *Conscience* in plain Cases, and Points of Moment ; let us no more dare to do in private what that tells us ought not to be done, than if we were upon an open Theatre, and the Eyes of the whole Creation were upon us. What signifies it that we escape the View and Observation of Men, when the watchful Witness within sees and records all our Faults, and will

will certainly one Day reprove us, and SER M.  
set our Misdeeds in Order before us. IV.

It hath been reckoned a good Rule for an happy Conduct of Life, to be sure of keeping our *domestick* Concerns right, and of being easy under our *own Roof*, where we may find an agreeable Retreat and Shelter from any Disappointments we meet with in the great Scene of Vexation, the World. And the same Rule will, with greater Reason hold, in relation to the Peace of our *Consciences*. Let out *first* Care be to keep all quiet and serene *there*: When this Point is once gained at Home, external Accidents will not be able deeply to affect us; and unless it be gained, all the Pleasures, the Abundance and Pomp of Life will be insipid and tasteless to us.

Wherefore let us resolve all of us to stick to that Principle, which will keep us easy when we are alone, and will stick to us in an Hour when all outward Comforts fail us. Let those of us particularly cherish it, who are in



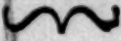
SERM.

IV.

any Degree placed above the rest of our Neighbours by a Superiority of Parts, Power, Riches, or any other outward Distinctions. Let those chiefly listen to *this* Reprover, who are otherwise set in great measure *above* Reproof: The more destitute they are of Advice and Correction from *others*, the more careful should they be to attend to the Suggestions and Whispers of *this* inward Monitor and Friend. Though they value not the Censures passed by the *Vulgar* on their Actions, yet surely they cannot slight their *own*: Nor do they stoop *beneath* themselves, when they stoop *to* themselves only, and to the inward Dictates and Persuasions of their own Minds. The Marks of Distinction they bear, though they may enable them sometimes to sin with Impunity as to *Men*, yet will they not secure them against the Lashes of an avenging *Conscience*; which will find them out in their most secret Retirements, cannot be forbid Access, nor dismissed without being heard; will make

*The Terrors of Conscience.*

131

make their Way to them, as they did SERM.  
to *Herod* and *Tiberius*, through Bu- IV.  
siness or Pleasure, nay even through   
Guards and Crowds, and all the vain  
Forms and Ceremonies, with which  
they may be surrounded.

In a Word; Let us *keep Innocency,*  
*and do the Thing which is right;* for  
whatever other Expedients towards  
Happiness Men may take up with,  
yet *that*, and that only, *will bring us* Pf. xxxvii.  
*Peace at the last.* 37.

made high ways to them, as they did, and  
at first and then, through the  
side of the hill, they were through  
Gulches and Crows, and all the way  
to the top of the mountain, where  
they were to be surprised.  
In a short time, they were  
and as the day was in the  
whenever they were towards  
the top of the hill, they were  
put to rest, and then, only, was  
the day of the day.



---

Several Useful  
OBSERVATIONS  
ON  
St. PAUL's  
DEFENSE of HIMSELF  
BEFORE  
FELIX.

---

---

Several Uddel

OBSERVATIONS

ON

SEPAULS

DEFENSE OF HIMSELF

BEFORE

FELIX

---

---

*St. Paul's Defense before Felix:*

---

A  
S E R M O N

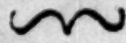
Preached at  
St. JAMES'S Chapel,

*February 27, 1712-3.*

---

ACTS xxiv. Part of Ver. 25.

*And as He reasoned of Righteousness,  
Temperance, and Judgment to come,  
FELIX trembled.*

WHO, that hears these Words, SERM.  
would not wish to have been v.  
present at this astonishing Scene; which   
represents the Apostle of the Gentiles,  
giving an Account of his Faith to Fe-  
lix, the Roman Governor, in so mov-  
ing



SERM. ing and convincing a manner, with such  
 v. a Force of Eloquence and Strength of  
 Argument, that even he, before whom  
 he stands capitally accused, is struck,  
 awed, confounded by his Discourse,  
 and the Judge himself quakes at the  
 Voice of the Prisoner! *As he reason-  
 ed of Righteousness, Temperance, and  
 Judgment to come* (says the Text) *Felix  
 trembled.*

The Words will furnish us with  
 very Instructive and Useful Reflections,  
 if we take Occasion from them distinct-  
 ly to consider,

- I. *First, The Subject Matter of Saint Paul's Discourse; Righteousness, Temperance, and Judgment to come.*
- II. *Secondly, His Manner of handling it; he reasoned,*
- III. *Thirdly, The remarkable Effect, that followed, upon his thus handling this important Subject; Felix trembled.*

*First,*

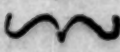
First, The Subject Matter of Saint SERM.  
 Paul's Discourse is said to have been, v.  
*Righteousness, Temperance, and Judgment to come.* ~~~~~

Not that we are to imagine, that the Apostle confined himself solely to the *three* Particulars here mentioned, without touching on any other Point of Christian Doctrine: Doubtless he declared to *Felix* the *whole Counsel* of God in the Redemption of Man by *Christ Jesus*; and insisted particularly on the great Article of *Christ's Resurrection*, in this Sermon, as he did in many others: For the Words, immediately preceding those of the Text, are, that *Felix sent for Paul, and heard him concerning the Faith in Christ*; and therefore *all* the Articles of the *Christian Faith* were, we may be sure, sufficiently explained by him. However, though many other Doctrines were at that Time handled by the Apostle, yet these of *Righteousness, Temperance, and Judgment to come*, had  
 so

SERM. so large a Share in his Discourse, were  
v. so warmly, so effectually urged by him,  
that St. *Luke* hath not thought fit to  
take Notice of any other Part of his  
Sermon. From whence we are natu-  
rally led to raise this plain, but profit-  
able Observation, that the moral Duties  
we are to practise in *this* Life, and the  
Rewards or Punishments we are to ex-  
pect in *another*, are the chief Consider-  
ations in Religion, which should most  
often and earnestly be inculcated by  
those who *preach* the Gospel, and be  
most attentively listened to, and weigh-  
ed by those who *hear* it.

Some Persons have a Prejudice against  
what is, by way of Reproach, called  
*Moral Preaching*, and *Moral Arguing*;  
when the Nature of Good and Evil,  
Virtue and Vice are insisted on, and  
the several Consequences displayed,  
which, by the Light of Reason, are  
known to attend them: This, they  
think, is not to preach *Jesus Christ*,  
and his Gospel; it is not, to speak spi-  
ritually, feelingly, powerfully, to the  
Hearts



Hearts and Consciences of Men. But SERM.  
St. Paul, it seems, was not of this V.  
Mind, when he made *Justice*, and   
*Temperance*, and a *future Account*, the  
chief Subject of his Sermon before  
*Felix*; when he argued (as his Man-  
ner of Preaching upon other Occasions  
shews that he did) from Principles of  
Natural Light, how great Reason Men  
had to practise the two *first* of these,  
and to believe and expect the *latter*;  
when he enlarged upon the intrinsic  
Beauty and Loveliness of those Virtues,  
and their manifest Subserviency to  
Mens present and future Happiness;  
and urged the universal Consent of  
Mankind to this Purpose, who had al-  
ways acknowledged themselves to be  
under these Obligations, and, accord-  
ingly as they *did*, or did *not* fulfil  
them here, liable to be *rewarded*, or  
*punished* hereafter. St. Paul, we may  
be sure, thought himself all this while  
to be preaching *Jesus Christ* and his  
Gospel: And from the *Effect* we learn,  
that this *Moral* preaching of the Apostle  
was

S E R M. was sufficiently powerful, awakening,  
 v. edifying; for it had such a Spiritual  
 ~~~~~ Efficacy in it, as to make his Auditor  
 tremble.

But the *Subject* Matter of St. Paul's Discourse is not more observable, on the Account of its *Excellence and Importance at large*, than it is, for the particular *Fitnes and Propriety* of it, with Regard to the *Person* to whom it was addressed. The two Vices of which *Felix* was most remarkably guilty, were *Injustice* and *Intemperance*; as Historians of unsuspected Credit, both *Heathen* and *Jewish*, inform us. *Tacitus* says of him, that, *Judææ impositus, & cuncta malefacta sibi impune [cessura] ratus, tantâ potentiâ subnixo, per omnem sævitiam ac libidinem jus regium servili ingenio exercuit: i. e.* The Impunity which he promised himself from his high Station and Power, tempted him to commit all manner of Lust and Violence. And *Josephus* adds, that *Drusilla* herself, who now sat with him on the Judgment Seat, was really the

the Wife of a certain King of the *Eme-senes*, but had been enticed from his Bed by *Felix*, with whom she now publickly lived and conversed. Nothing therefore could be more *apposite*, than a Discourse concerning *Righteousness* and *Temperance*, before *such* a cruel and voluptuous Person; nothing more *proper*, than to put this unjust Judge in mind of *another*, a more impartial and dreadful *Tribunal*, before which *he* himself should one Day stand, and be judged. Thus did St. *Paul* adapt and proportion what he spake to the peculiar Wants and Exigences of the Hearer; and in so doing, left us a Pattern worthy of Imitation; such as, when attentively considered, will give us great Occasion to admire the *Dexterity* and *Address*, the *sincere* and *disinterested Conduct*, the mighty *Courage* and *Zeal* of this Eminent Apostle.

What could have more of holy *Art* and *Wisdom* in it, than St. *Paul*'s answering the Enquiries of *Felix* in *such* a Manner, as was most likely to benefit the

SERM. the Enquirer? The *Roman* Governor,
 v. led by no other Principle than *Curio-*
 sity, desires from *St. Paul* an Account
 of his Faith: *St. Paul* readily com-
 plies, and so orders that Account, as
 to set *those* Parts of Christianity in the
 clearest Light before *Felix*, which he
 wanted most to see and consider; so as
 to turn off his *general* Apology for the
 Gospel into an immediate and close
 Application of some of its chief Doc-
 trines to the *particular* Case of *Felix*;
 and to shew him, e'er he is aware, that
 the Laws both of Christianity and Na-
 ture agree, in condemning his Violences
 and Impurities.

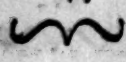
What a *sincere* and *disinterested* Spi-
 rit does there appear in *St. Paul* on
 this Occasion! He stood there accused
 of heinous Crimes, and was ready to
 sink under the Malice and mighty
 Power of his Accusers, the High Priest,
 and chief Men of the *Jewish* Sanhe-
 drim then present, and soliciting a se-
 vere Sentence against him. And yet he
 seems regardless of the imminent Peril
 he

he was in; and, forgetting his own private Interest, any Degree of Concern for himself, turns all his Thoughts, and bends his whole Force towards promoting the general Interest of the Gospel, and the Salvation of Souls. He contrives not how he may gain the *Affections* of his Judge, and make him favourable to his Cause; but how only he may induce him to be kind to himself, and a good *Christian*; how he may render him fit to receive Mercy and Favour from the supreme Judge of Heaven and Earth. What is, if this be not, to preach the Gospel of *Christ* in *Simplicity* and godly *Sincerity*?

Lastly, we may observe also, in the Behaviour of *St. Paul*, the Marks of an *Undaunted* and *Exemplary Courage*. He fears not, we see, to utter necessary, though harsh and ungrateful Truths in the Ears of one, who had the Power of Life and Death over him. He knew, with what Dangers the faithful Discharge of his Duty would, in
this

SERM.

V.

S E R M. this Case, be attended; how impatient
v. the Great are, under Reproof, though
 couched in the most gentle and least
offensive Language; what absolute Em-
pire *Drusilla* had gained over the Heart
of *Felix*, and with what Revengeful-
ness that impure Woman would be sure
to pursue any one, who should venture
to represent his Guilt to him, and to
rouze his sleeping Conscience: And yet
none of these frightening Considerations
were able to repress his Godly Zeal,
or to check his Freedom; which he
conducted indeed, with great Caution
and Prudence, insinuating his Reproofs
under the Cover of some Evangelical
Doctrines, then proposed by him:
However, with so great Force and
Success, as to strike Confusion and Ter-
ror into the Person, for whom they
were intended.

Let us copy the excellent Pattern
which this Apostle hath set us, by tak-
ing all proper Opportunities of spread-
ing the Kingdom of *Christ* in the
Hearts of Men, and of advancing the
Interests

Interests of his Gospel. Let us resolve always to do our Duty, and discharge a good Conscience faithfully, without being deterred by *possible* Inconveniences, or Dangers that *may* attend us for so doing; without suffering *secular* Views, and our own *private* Interests to divert us from pursuing any good Design, whereby we may reasonably hope to promote the Divine Glory, and the Good of Mankind. Let us act in such Cases discreetly indeed, warily, wisely; but withal courageously, zealously, firmly, as disregarding the Fear of *Man*, when it comes in Competition with the Fear of *God*. These (I say) are the Intimations, these the Instructions given us by the Behaviour of *St. Paul*; when, before an oppressive, a dissolute, and an unbelieving Magistrate, he took an Occasion to Discourse of *Righteousness, Temperance, and Judgment to come*.

In which Discourse of his,

SERM.

V.

The *Second* Thing observable is, his *Manner* of handling these Subjects; *he Reasoned*: that is, he treated of them in a *Rational* Way; proving from the Nature and Tendency of those Virtues our Obligation to practise them; and inferring from those Obligations the Certainty and Necessity of a future Account, wherein Notice should be taken how we have, or have not complied with them; and we should be rewarded or punished accordingly. And can any Thing be said more to the Advantage of a *Rational* Way of evincing the Doctrines of *Morality*, and the Truths of the *Gospel*, than that *St. Paul* practised it? He practised it, not on *this* only, but on many *other* Occasions: In his several Apologies for himself and for his Gospel, recorded in the *Acts*, throughout his Epistles sent to the several Churches he planted, we find this great Apostle of the *Gentiles* continually *Reasoning*; not merely proposing Doctrines in an

Autho-

Authoritative Manner, by Virtue of SERM.
 his Apostleship and Commission from IV.
 God, but proving and making good
 what he proposes by *Inference* and
Argument. Thus he frequently did,
 and by so doing has sanctified *Reason*
 to the Purposes of *Religion*, and shewed
 us that *one* Sort (indeed the *best* Sort) of
good Preaching, consists in *good Ar-*
guing.

Some pious and well meaning *Chri-*
stians have a very wrong Notion con-
 cerning *edifying* Discourses, and pro-
 fitting by Sermons. They relish no-
 thing from the Pulpit, but what is
 addressed to their *Passions*, and set out
 with all the Advantages of a popular
 Eloquence, and moving Delivery. By
 this Means they find themselves *in-*
wardly affected and warmed; and that
 heating of their *Fancy* they esteem and
 call *Spiritual Edification*. But when
 any Point of Doctrine is handled in a
 Close and Argumentative Manner, it
 appears flat and unsavoury to them,
 has nothing in it of the Life and

SERM. *Power of Godliness*, and is all mere hu-

IV. *man Reasoning*. But herein they are
 ~~~~~ widely mistaken; for it is a far greater and more useful Work, to inform the *Understandings*, and convince the *Judgments* of Men, than to raise their *Passions*; and that Discourse, which is most *Instructive*, and best supported by *Reason*, is certainly, if Men attend to it as they ought, most *Edifying* too. A Vehement and Voluble *Tongue*, a languishing *Tone* of Voice, a pious Set of *Phrases*, or the like, will very powerfully move the *Affections* of some Sort of Hearers; but the Warmth by that Means raised, is momentary, and vanishing, without any true, sound, lasting, spiritual *Improvement*. To compass that, the Way, we find, which the mighty and successful Preacher St. *Paul* took, was, to *Reason*. Though he were *Divinely Inspired*, and spake therefore, as the *Oracles of God*, with an uncontroulable *Authority*; though he were endued with Supernatural Powers, and could therefore have confirmed

firmed the Truth of what he uttered SERM.  
 by *Miracles*; yet in Compliance with IV.  
 the Way in which Human Nature, ~  
 and Reasonable Creatures are usually  
 wrought upon, he *Reasoned*. But these  
 Reflections have been in some Degree  
 anticipated; and therefore, without en-  
 larging farther upon them, I hasten to  
 consider the

*Third* and *last* Thing observable in III.  
 the Text, the wonderful *Effect* that  
 followed upon St. Paul's thus *Reason-*  
*ing* on these important Subjects, *Felix*  
*trembled*. His Mind was filled with  
 Horror, at the Remembrance of his  
*past* Crimes, and the Apprehension of  
 a *future* Reckoning; and these *inward*  
 Fears and Forebodings appeared in the  
*outward* and visible Marks of a great  
 Consternation.

Though *he* was one of the mightiest  
 Men on Earth, and *Paul*, a poor de-  
 spised Prisoner; though he was then  
 sitting on the Seat of Judgment, where  
 it behoved him to do nothing that

S E R M. misbecame his high Place and Character; yet could he not dissemble the Pangs and Agonies of his uneasy Mind, *he trembled!*

From whence it is natural to observe the great Force and Efficacy of the Word of God, duly handled and applied: *It is* (according to the Account of it, given by this very Apostle in another Place) *quick and powerful, and sharper than any two edged Sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of Soul and Spirit, and of the Joints and Marrow, and is a Discerner of the Thoughts and Intents of the Heart.*

Heb. iv. 12. There is no *Sin* so secret, but that it will find it out and expose it; no *Heart* so hard, but that it can soften it; no *Conscience* so far plunged in a lethargick Sleep, but that it is able to rouse it. Strange are the Instances of this Kind recorded in Holy Writ. Our Lord opens the Prophecies, and expounds the Scriptures concerning

Luke xxiv. 13. himself, to the *two Disciples* travelling towards *Emmaus*; and, while he is doing



ing it, *their Hearts burn within them.* SERM.

*Philip* points out to the Eunuch the IV.

Meaning of a Chapter in *Isaias*; im- Acts viii.

mediately Light and Conviction rush 35.

into his Mind; he confesses *Jesus*, and

demands Baptism. *St. Peter* preaches

the Gospel to a great Multitude of

the *Jews*, who had just before been

instrumental in the Crucifixion of

*Christ*: They no sooner hear him,

than they are *pricked to the Heart*,

and cry out, *Men and Brethren, what* Acts ii. 37.

*shall we do?* and straightway there are

*added to the Faith* no less than Three

Thousand Souls by this single Sermon.

And here in the Text, while *St. Paul*

*is reasoning of Righteousness, Temper-* Acts ii. 41.

*ance, and Judgment to come, Felix*

*trembles.* Such is the wonderful Power

of Truth, when particularly blessed

by the God of Truth, and bid to go

forth and prosper! Such is the great

and astonishing Influence of the Word

of God, when assisted and enlivened

by his Spirit! It prevails over all Dif-

iculties, all Opposition, and is *mighty* 2Cor. x. 4.

SERM. to the pulling down of strong Holds.

v. Remarkable to this Effect is the different Success of *Tertullus's* and *St. Paul's* Pleading. *Tertullus*, we may presume, was one of the most famous Pleaders of his Time ; else the High Priest and Elders, in a Cause of such Consequence (which they themselves went from *Jerusalem* to *Cæsarea* on Purpose to prosecute) would not have pitched upon *him* for their Advocate. And yet this great *Orator*, with all his studied Art and Eloquence, made no Impression on *Felix* ; whereas *St. Paul's* Speech soon afterwards moved, terrified, confounded him. The Reason of which different Effect seems to have been, that the *one* was with good Words to varnish over an ill Cause, and by the Power of Oratory to support a false and lying Accusation : Whereas the *other* had Right and Truth on his side, and therefore pressed them earnestly : He himself felt what he spake, had an inward and vital Sense of those Truths he delivered ; and therefore

therefore he made others feel them too; SERM.  
he spake *from* his own Heart, and *to* v.  
the Hearts and Consciences of those  
that heard him; and *therefore* he pre-  
vailed.

How should this Instance of the operative Virtue of God's Word reproach our Sluggishness and Insensibility? An impure and wicked *Heathen* (we hear) trembled at St. Paul's Doctrine. The *same Doctrine* sounds every Day in the Ears of negligent *Christians*, without terrifying, without alarming them. The *same Apostle* still Reasons with them in his Epistles, concerning *Righteousness, Temperance, and Judgment to come*: But he reasons to no Purpose; his Words seem to them as *idle Tales*; they neither feel their Force, not regard their Meaning. Surely for this *Felix* shall one Day rise up in Judgment against them; for *he* heard and trembled.

I observe (*Secondly*) that though *Felix* shewed great Concern on that Occasion, yet *Drusilla*, the Partner of his



SERM.

v.

his Crimes, did, for ought appears, sit by altogether unmoved with the Apostle's Discourse. The most probable Account of which seems to be this; that *she*, being born and bred a *Jewess*, had better Opportunities of knowing the Will of God and her own Duty, and greater Obligations to practise what she knew, than *those* who were guided only by the Light of Nature and Reason. And yet, notwithstanding the mighty Restraints which her Religion laid upon her, she had forsaken her Marriage Vows, and gone from the Bed of her Husband, who was circumcised, into that of an uncircumcised Heathen. For which Reason *her Guilt* was of a much deeper Dye than that of *Felix* was; and consequently her Heart more obdurate, and insensible of Reproof. From whence we may raise to ourselves this general and useful Reflection; that the more Advantages any Man has towards discovering the Truth, and the more freely the Means of Grace have been

been indulged to him, the more desperate in his Case, if he happens to revolt, and the harder will the Task be, SERM. V.

if he turns profligate, to reclaim him. It is a Work of much less Difficulty to make a good *Christian* of a professed Heathen, than to bring an ill *Christian*, who now lives like an Heathen, to a feeling Sense of his Sins, and to any Degree of true Remorse and Compunction of Heart for them.

Let us hear the Issue of the whole Matter — What the *Consequences* of these Tremblings of *Felix* was, and how long they continued upon him, the Context will inform us. He abruptly breaks off the Discourse with *St. Paul*, and dismisses him in Haste. *Go thy way* (says he) *for this Time, when I have a convenient Season I will call for thee!* But he soon recovers from his Fright; for it presently follows — *He hoped also, that Money should have been given him of Paul, that he might loose him; wherefore he sent for him the oftner, and communed with*

SERM. *with him.* We see the Seed of the

v.

Word, sown by the Apostle, *fell among Thorns, and immediately the Thorns*

*Satan*

Matt. xiii.  
7.

*sprung up, and choked it:* The Love of unjust and oppressive Gain quickly returned upon *Felix*, and drove out the Impressions of St. Paul's Reasonings; and when he had *once* stood the Shock of his Conscience, and got the better of his Fears, he afterwards heard the *same Things* said, without any Degree of the *same* Remorse and Concern. *He sent for St. Paul often, and communed with him,* with no other Design but that of gratifying his Curiosity, and extorting a Bribe from him—So suddenly and easily may the best Reflections be stifled, and the strongest Convictions overborn by the Force of any one prevailing Vice, or Lust, that hath gotten an absolute Dominion over us!

That this may not be our Case, whenever we hear an awakening Discourse from the Pulpit, and find our Consciences touched to the Quick with  
some



some apposite Passages of it; let us not SERM.  
 forthwith endeavour to get rid of the v.  
 Smart, and to dismiss such troublesome

Reflections, as *Felix* did; *Go your way for this time, when I have a convenient Season I will call for you.* Nay, but *this* is the proper *Time*, *this* the most convenient *Season* for our entertaining them, and conversing with them, when they press to be admitted, and heard. Take not therefore something, as the Way is, to put off the Fit; call not in Company, Business, or Pleasure to divert your Thoughts from their present melancholy Employment; but rather study every way to cherish and promote these good *Beginnings* by Retirement, Meditation, and Prayer!

*Commune with your own Heart in your Chamber, and be still there; suffer these Terrors of the Lord freely to reason and plead with you, till they have persuaded you there in private; re-apply, and inforce, and improve those good Impressions, you received in public, till you have riveted the Influence*  
 of

Psal. iv.

11.

SERM. of them fast into your Mind, and  
 v. reached the End for which the good  
 Spirit of God intended them; even till  
 (by the Means of them) you have  
 2 Cor. vii. wrought out a *Repentance to Salvation*  
 10. *not to be repented of!*

*Which that all of us may attain, God  
 of his infinite Mercy grant, through  
 the Merits of Christ our Saviour,  
 to whom, with the Father and the  
 blessed Spirit, be ascribed all Power  
 and Praise, now and for ever.*

---

---

THE  
CROSS of *CHRIST*

THE  
Only Thing we ought to glory in,

AND THE  
PROPER METHODS  
of Glorifying in It.

---



---

THE  
CROSS OF CHRIST

THE  
Only Thing we ought to glory in,

AND THE  
PROPER METHODS

of Glorifying in It.

---

---

*Of Glorifying in the Cross of CHRIST:*

---

A  
S E R M O N

Preached at

St. JAMES'S Chapel,

ON

GOOD-FRIDAY, 1718.

---

GAL. vi. 14.

*But God forbid that I should glory, save  
in the Cross of our Lord Jesus Christ,  
whereby the World is crucified unto  
me, and I unto the World.*

**G**OD forbid! A Manner of SERM.  
Speech familiar, and almost VI.  
peculiar to St. Paul; frequently em-  
ployed by him in his Writings, thrice  
VOL. IV. M in

SERM. in this very Epistle; never, but where

VI. he intends, with a particular Degree of Earnestness and Vehemence, to condemn some Doctrine or Practice imputed to *Christians*, or prevailing among them; by which he thought Christianity highly dishonoured. In such Cases, it is usual with him to express his Dislike, his Detestation of such Doctrine, or Practice, by this emphatical Phrase, *μη ᾤσιντο*, which we translate, *God forbid!*

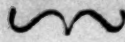
The special Occasion of his employing it here in the Text, was this: The *Gentile* Converts among the *Galatians*, after St. Paul's Departure from them, had been seduced by some false Teachers, who were *Jews*, into a Belief, that the *Law of Moses* was not entirely abolished, but that Circumcision, and the other Rites of it, were still necessary to be observed by all those, who, being *Heathens*, intended to become *Christians*. This Opinion had been entertained, and spread by these false Teachers, partly



ly through a superstitious Reverence for S E R M.  
 their *Law*, and a mistaken Notion VI.  
 of the true Nature and Design of the *Gospel*; and partly, with a View of  
 lessening the Prejudices, which the  
*Jews* had conceived against the Doc-  
 trine of *Christ*; and of avoiding the  
 Persecutions, which they every where  
 raised against those, who propagated, or  
 professed it.

The Apostle having argued against  
 these Teachers, and their Opinions,  
 strongly and fervently in various Parts  
 of this Epistle, returns to the same  
 Subject at the Close of it; and there  
 sums up in short, what he had before  
 more largely delivered. *As many* (says  
 he) *as desire to make a fair shew in the*  
*Flesh* [*ὡς πορεύεσθαι ἐν σαρκί*, a Phrase  
 of his own, which signifies, to act  
 upon carnal Views, and for worldly  
 Ends, and to study popular and plau-  
 sible Appearances] *they constrain you to*  
*be circumcised, only lest they should*  
*suffer Persecution for the Cross of*  
*Christ.* [Not so much out of a Con-

S E R M. viction of the Necessity of what they

VI.  urge upon you, as that they may live easily, and carry Things smoothly with all Men.] For, as it follows, *neither They [these false Teachers] themselves, who are Circumcised, keep the Law; but desire to have you Circumcised. To what End? Even that they may glory in your Flesh; that they may boast of having made you Profelytes to Judaism, in the Way to Christianity, and by that Means recommend themselves to their Countrymen, on the Account of their Zeal for the Law of Moses, at the same Time that they would be thought to serve the Interests of the Gospel. But let them consult their own Safety, and affect a false Glory by this insincere Conduct, if they please; God forbid (says he) that I should glory, save in the Cross of our Lord Jesus Christ! God forbid, that I should act upon any such worldly Views and Motives in the Propagation of the Doctrine of Christ, or think to promote it by any Methods, but what*

what are agreeable to the Nature and SERM.  
Design of it: It is the Doctrine of the VI.  
Cross, and ought therefore to be preach-  
ed in Simplicity and godly Sincerity,  
without worldly Hopes or Fears, with-  
out Arts and Disguises: The chief Ar-  
ticle of this Doctrine, that wherein the  
great Lines of it center, is, the Satis-  
faction made to Divine Justice, by the  
Sufferings and Death of a Crucified Sa-  
viour. By this Sacrifice of the Cross  
all the legal Sacrifices and Ceremonies  
are determined and abolished; by this,  
and this only, a real Atonement is made  
to God for our Sins, and a Way open-  
ed to his Favour: On this, consequent-  
ly, all the Hopes and Happiness of a  
*Christian* depend. Mean therefore and  
ignominious as the Circumstances of  
this Transaction were, I will not be  
offended at them myself, nor fear lest  
others should be offended: On this Sub-  
ject I will perpetually dwell in my pri-  
vate Meditations, and in my publick  
Instructions: Of this Capital Article of  
the Christian Faith I will not only not



S E R M. be ashamed, but I will boast; I will

VI. *glory in it, and in nothing beyond, or besides it: For it is a Doctrine full of Wonder and Delight, of Instruction, Advantage, and Comfort to sincere Believers, to penitent Sinners; since it is that, whereby the World is Crucified unto me, and I unto the World. Whereby the World is Crucified unto me: All that is in the World, the Lust of the Flesh, the Lust of the Eye, and the Pride of Life, is rendered, though not incapable of polluting me, yet ineffectual towards condemning me; the Sting of Sin is taken away, the Guilt is pardoned; and I am crucified unto the World: I am, by the victorious Power of that Grace, which was purchased by this Sacrifice of the Cross, become insensible, and dead, as it were, to the Pleasures, the Poms and Vanities of this World; I have crucified the*

Gal. v. 24. *Flesh, with the Affections and Lusts. Since therefore the Sufferings of Christ are of so great Efficacy and Power, as to be able to free me, not only from the*

the

the Guilt and Punishment of Sin, but SERM.  
 also from the Dominion and Power of VI.  
 it; is there any Thing I should value  
 myself upon, in Comparison of the  
 Privilege of being made a Partaker of  
 the Merits of these Sufferings? in  
 Comparison of the Mercies, the Ad-  
 vantages I enjoy, by the Means of this  
 humble, but admirable Dispensation?  
 Let others form to themselves what  
 Schemes of Satisfaction and Happiness,  
 pride themselves in what Preeminences,  
 what Distinctions they please; *But God*  
*forbid that I should glory, save in the*  
*Cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, whereby*  
*the World is crucified unto me, and I un-*  
*to the World!*

I have largely explained the *Conne-*  
*ction*, and thereby opened the *Meaning*  
 of these Words of St. Paul: The Use  
 I intend to make of them is, from  
 thence to shew,

*First*, That whatever Excellencies, I.  
 outward Advantages, or Privileges, it  
 may be our Lot to enjoy, yet it mis-

M 4 becomes

SERM. becomes us, as we are *Christians*, to

VI. *glory in them: But that,*

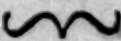
II. *Secondly, It highly becomes us to glory in the Cross of Christ.*

III. *Thirdly, By what Methods, and in Opposition to what Enemies of the Cross of Christ, we are obliged to glory in it.—Of these three Points in their Order, as far as the Time will permit. And,*

I. *First, I am to shew, That whatever Excellencies, outward Advantages, or Privileges it may be our Lot to enjoy, yet it misbecomes us, as we are Christians, to glory in them.*

I do not say, that we are to be insensible of such Advantages, to have no Relish of them, no Complacence in them: For neither Reason nor Religion require such a Conduct from us. They are the good Things of Life, given us by the Author of all Good, on purpose that we should, in due Measure



Measure and Season, enjoy them; nor SERM.  
 can they of themselves, while our Ap- VI.  
 petites, and our Opinions concerning   
 such Things are well regulated, be  
 hurtful to those who possess them.  
 They may be *used*, if they are not  
*over-valued*; if we do not suffer our  
 Affections to cleave too closely to them,  
 and our Minds to be in any degree e-  
 lated, and swelled by a Reflection upon  
 them. They may be a *Part*, a *small*  
 Part of our Happiness in this transito-  
 ry Scene of Life, provided we always  
 retain in our Minds the Apostle's Di-  
 rections concerning them, That they,  
*who have these Things, be as though* 1 Cor. vii.  
*they had them not; and they that re-* 30, 31.  
*joice, as though they rejoiced not; and*  
*they that buy, as though they possessed*  
*not; and they that use this World, as*  
*not abusing it; for the Fashion of this*  
*World passeth away:* These worldly  
 Advantages, these Honours, Profits,  
 Pleasures, whatever they be, are of un-  
 certain Continuance, and may in a lit-  
 tle Time slip away from us; to be  
 sure,

SERM. sure, we shall in a little Time slip a-

VI. way from them, and leave them behind us: And therefore, why should we rest in them? Why should we boast of them? Why should we feed and raise, not our Appetites and Lusts only, but our Vanity and Pride also, by the Means of them?

The Christian Religion, by the Tendency of all its Doctrines (particularly that of *Christ* crucified) by the manner of its Progress, and the mean Characters of those who first promulged and embraced it, seems to have been so throughout, contrived, as effectually to mortify, and beat down any undue Complacency we may have in ourselves on such Occasions. *Ye see your Calling, Brethren* (says St. Paul with that *παρρησία*, that becoming Freedom of Speech, in which he excels) *how that not many wise Men after the Flesh, not many Mighty, not many Noble are called; but God hath chosen the foolish Things of the World to confound the Wise; and God hath chosen the weak Things*

1 Cor i.  
26.

*Things of the World, to confound the* SERM.

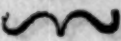
*Things which are mighty; and the base* VI.

*Things of the World, and the Things*  
*which are despised hath be chosen, yea,*  
*and the Things which are not, to bring*  
*to nought the Things that are.* And to  
 what end did he thus order Matters in  
 the Propagation of his Gospel? Even to  
 this (as it follows) *that no Flesh should*  
*glory in his Presence,* but that *he who*  
*glorieth might glory in the Lord;* might  
 value himself upon being a serious sincere  
*Christian,* and upon nothing besides  
 it.

Indeed it is enough to disparage all  
 the fine Shews and Appearances of this  
 Life, and to render us indifferent to all  
 the Charms of it, if we do but atten-  
 tively consider that compleat Instance  
 of suffering Greatness and Goodness,  
 on which our Faith and Devotion  
 ought this Day to be employed. For  
 on this Day they were all, together  
 with *the Handwriting of Ordinances,* Col. ii. 14.  
 (the ceremonious Observances of the  
 Law) *blotted out,* fullied, and defaced,  
 and



SERM. and *nailed by Christ to his Cross*, as  
VI. the Scripture speaks; on which when  
he was lifted up, he did there crucify  
the World, and the Things of it, ec-  
clipse the Lustre, and destroy the Power  
of all its empty Vanities. Behold then  
our High-priest, offering up the great  
Sacrifice required for the Redemption  
of Souls! pouring out his own Blood  
on the Altar of his Cross, and thereby  
making an Atonement for the Sins of  
the whole World! Behold him, I say,  
by the Eye of Faith, and you will ac-  
knowledge, that though there was ne-  
ver any Spectacle so sad, yet neither  
was there ever any so glorious, or so  
worthy of being contemplated and ad-  
mired by Men and Angels. Stript in-  
deed he was of all outward Comforts  
and Supports, surrounded he was with  
every Thing that to human Nature  
was grievous: And yet, even in this  
Depth of his Humiliation, if we con-  
sider the mighty Work he was accom-  
plishing, we cannot but despise all the  
vain Poms of Life, in comparison of  
the

the Splendor of his Sufferings. For S E R M.  
 then, even then, while he hung on VI.  
 the Cross, was the great Captain of our   
 Salvation fighting our Battles, and sub-  
 duing our Enemies; then was he *lead-*  
*ing Captivity captive, spoiling Principa-*  
*lities and Powers, making a Shew of* Eph. iv. 8.  
*them openly, and triumphing over them* Col. ii. 15.  
*in himself:* Then was he vanquishing  
 Death by his Death, and opening for  
 us a Gate to Life and Immortality:  
 Then was he disarming Sin of its Sting,  
 and Hell of its Terrors; and procuring  
 for us those Supplies of Grace, which  
 might enable us to withstand the Temp-  
 tations of Sense, and the Wiles of the  
 Devil.

Surely the vain Glories of this World,  
 when compared with these real Tri-  
 umphs of the Cross of *Christ*, must  
 lose all their Force and Influence, and  
 grow flat and insignificant in the Eyes  
 of a good *Christian*. Can we look up  
 to him that was pierced, see him  
 stretched on his Cross, enduring the  
 Pain, despising the Shame of it, and  
 not

S E R M. not look down with Neglect and Con-

VI. tempt on that Scene of Sin and Vanity

which occasioned those Sufferings? Is

<sup>1</sup> John ii. it possible for us to *love the World,*

<sup>15.</sup> *and the Things that are in the World,*

while our Eyes are fixed on him, who

Gal. i. 4. *gave himself for our Sins, that he might*

*deliver us from this present evil World;*

that is, on purpose that he might free

us from the enchanting Power of its

empty Delights, and vain Allurements?

These he taught us, by his Doctrine

and by his Practice, by his Life and

by his Death, to undervalue; he chose

to be without them, and the Perfec-

tion of *his* Virtue consisted in over-

looking and despising them. *We* there-

fore, who profess to be his Followers,

must certainly degenerate very far from

that Profession, when we eagerly pur-

sue, greedily enjoy, and highly admire

them.

<sup>1</sup> Cor. v. 6. Beloved, this *our glorying is not good,*

But,

II. *Secondly,* It highly becomes us to

*glory in the Cross of Christ,* as I pro-

posed,



posed, in the second Place to shew. SERM.  
 For since by the alone Merits of his VI.  
 Cross we gain all the Advantages of the  
 Christian Dispensation, are reconciled to  
 God, and made capable of Heaven and  
 Happiness, we cannot but glory in that  
 Cross, if indeed we value ourselves upon  
 our being *Christians*.

The Cross of *Christ* is the Doctrine,  
 to which all the other Doctrines of the  
 Gospel refer, and from which they de-  
 rive all the Efficacy and Influence they  
 have, towards purging our Conscien-  
 ces from dead Works; and therefore  
 in that single Article they are often all  
 of them summed up and comprized.  
*We preach Christ crucified,* says St. 1 Cor. i.  
*Paul*; as if that, and that alone were <sup>23.</sup>  
 the Subject of all he wrote, and all  
 he spoke: And again, *I determined to* 1 Cor. ii. 2.  
*know nothing but Christ, and him cru-*  
*cified*; as if that were the great Point  
 of saving Knowledge, to which those  
 who learn, or who teach the Religion  
 of *Christ*, should altogether apply them-  
 selves. Can we look upon it, under  
*this*

SERM. *this* View, and refrain from *glorifying*

VI. in it? To *this* Article of our Faith the

~ Enemies of the Gospel have always taken the greatest Exceptions; and in *this* therefore we ought to triumph most, as being secure against their Attacks, and despising their vain Objections and Reasonings. The first Preachers of our Faith must, in this Case, be

1 Cor. i. our Patterns. They knew that *Christ*

23. *crucified* was to the *Jews* a *Stumbling-Block*; but did they therefore dissemble the Scandal of the Cross for that very Reason? No! they boasted of it, they insisted upon it in all their Applications to the unbelieving *Jews*, recorded in the *Acts*; particularly Saint *Peter* omits no occasion of mentioning to them Him *whom they slew, and hanged on a Tree*; as an high Reproach to his Murderers indeed, but none at all to his Disciples and Followers.

Very fitly therefore has the Church of *England* appointed that, after we have been *received into the Congregation*

*tion*

tion of Christ's Flock by Baptism, we SERM.  
 should be signed with the Sign of the VI.  
 Cross, in token (as she speaks) that we  
 should not hereafter be ashamed to con-  
 fess the Faith of Christ crucified, but  
 should manfully fight under his Banner  
 against Sin, the World and the Devil,  
 and continue Christ's faithful Sol-  
 diers and Servants to our Lives Ends.

A Ceremony, which, whatever Fault  
 may have been found with it, is cer-  
 tainly very Antient, very Innocent, and  
 very significant too; as it fitly admo-  
 nishes us, throughout the whole Course  
 of our Christian Warfare, to look upon  
 the Cross of Christ as the proper Badge  
 of our Profession, which we ought not  
 to be ashamed, or afraid to own, when-  
 ever He, in whose Service we are listed,  
 shall call upon us to take it up, and  
 follow him. But to proceed, I am to  
 shew,

Thirdly, By what Methods, and in  
 opposition to what Enemies of the  
 Cross of Christ we are Obliged to Glory  
 in it.

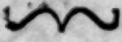
III.



S E R M. I. Now the *first* Step requisite to-

VI. wards our complying with this Obligation is, frequently to meditate on the Sufferings and Death of *Christ*. We glory in nothing but what we esteem and value; and what we value much, we shall be apt often and attentively to consider. We should therefore revolve

<sup>1</sup> Tim. iii. often in our Thoughts this *great My-*  
 16. *stery of Godliness, God manifest in the*  
*Flesh, dying on the Cross, to destroy the*  
*Works of the Devil*: We should turn it on all Sides, and consider it, as the proper Subject of our Awe and Wonder, our Joy and Pleasure, our Gratitude and Love; 'till we have warmed our Hearts with a lively Sense of the inestimable Benefits conferred on us by the Means of it. This the oftener we do, the better: But we cannot, without inexcusable Negligence, omit doing it on such a Day as this, set apart by the Church on Purpose to commemorate the *Passion* of our Lord. If we fail to employ some Part of this Day in our Closets, and in devout Meditations

ons on the Cross of *Christ*, we are un- SERM.  
worthy of that Redemption he pur- VI.  
chased for us. *What* (said our Saviour   
to his sleeping Disciples, when he was  
entring on his Agony) *can you not* Mat. xxvi.  
*watch with me one Hour!* Can you <sup>40.</sup>  
not shake off your Drowsiness, and bear  
me Company in my Sorrows for a few  
Moments, on so important and be-  
coming an Occasion? Can your slug-  
gish Inattention and Indifference to  
what concerns me so nearly, consist  
with a true Love of me, or with the  
Character of my faithful Disciples;  
*What! can you not watch with me one  
Hour? Watch and pray, lest ye enter  
into Temptation.*

2. A Second Step towards fulfilling  
our Obligation to glory in the Cross of  
*Christ*, is, if we endeavour to imitate  
the perfect Example he hath set us,  
and to form in our Minds some faint  
Resemblances of those meek Graces and  
Virtues, which adorn the Character of  
our suffering Saviour. And this Step  
is a natural Consequence of the for-

S E R M. mer ; for *Imitation* will in some De-

VI. gree spring from *Attention* : If we see  
 him as he is, we shall be like him, as  
 St. *John* argues. In vain do we boast

1 John iii. of the Cross of *Christ*, as that whereby  
 2. the *Guilt* of our Sins is abolished, if  
 the *Power* of them still remains unsub-  
 dued in us : Then are his Sufferings  
 our Glory, when they become a fruit-  
 ful Principle of Holiness to us, and af-  
 fect us in such a Manner, as to give us  
 Resolution and Strength to live above  
 the World, and all its Temptations.

*In hoc vince*, was the Inscription on  
 the Cross, in that Vision, by which  
 the first *Christian Emperor* was encour-  
 aged to give Battle to his Enemies.  
 And this also is the Motto, by which  
 every good *Soldier of Christ* is to ani-  
 mate himself in his spiritual Conflicts ;  
 this is to be written on our Banners,  
 and graven in our Minds : *This is the*  
*Victory which overcometh the World,*  
*even our Faith* in a crucified *Jesus*.

1 John v.  
 4.

When from Him we have learnt to  
 undervalue the false Glories of this  
 World,

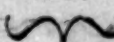


World, and to despise its Terrors, to SERM.  
live above the Gratifications of Sense, VI.  
to resign ourselves absolutely to God's  
Disposal, and to make it *our Meat and* John iv.  
*our Drink*, our only Study and De- 34.  
light, *to do the Will of him that sent*  
*us*; when we shall have emptied our-  
selves of all swelling Thoughts, all vain  
Conceits of our own Privileges and Per-  
fections, and shall be thoroughly in-  
structed in that great Lesson of Humi-  
lity, which he, who was *meek and* Matt. xi.  
*lowly in Heart*, hath taught us; when 29.  
we shall have so *considered him that* Heb. xii.  
*endured the Contradiction of Sinners* 3.  
*against himself, as not to be weary*  
*and faint in our Minds*, upon the like  
Oppositions and Trials; so, as to bear  
Indignities and Injuries decently and  
well, and to forgive and pray for those  
who do them; so as to be able to sup-  
port ourselves under any of the Cala-  
mities of Life with Equanimity and  
Patience, with Fortitude and Firm-  
ness: Then may we be said, most tru-  
ly, most effectually to glory in the

SERM. Cross of *Christ* ourselves, and to promote the Honour of his Religion with  
 VI. *others*, who shall observe our Progress in all divine Graces and Virtues, and be edified in beholding *our good Conversation in Christ Jesus*.

3. A *Third* Instance and Proof of our glorying as becomes us in the Cross of *Christ*, is, if we frequently and worthily celebrate the Memorial of his Death, the blessed Sacrament of his Body and Blood. For as often as ye eat this Bread, and drink this Cup, ye do shew forth the Lord's Death, until he come, καὶ αἰγέλλετε, ye do significantly express it, ye do solemnly publish and declare it. Indeed both the Sacraments that of *Baptism*, and this of the *Lord's Supper*, as they derive their Efficacy from the *Cross* of *Christ*, so do they carry in them some Resemblance of his *Death*: *Baptism*, of his Death and Resurrection jointly; the *Eucharist*, of his Death only; being instituted for this very End and Purpose, to imprint on our Minds, by  
 Sym-

1 Cor. xi.  
26.

Symbols of Bread broken, and Wine SERM.  
 poured out, a lively Image of the great VI.  
 Sacrifice of the Cross, and to inspire   
 us, by that Means, with such holy  
 Thoughts and Affections, as a good  
*Christian* would have, if he were  
 really an Eye Witness of the Passion of  
*Christ*. Often therefore ought we to  
 resort to this mysterious Repast, even  
 as often as we have Occasion (and when  
 we have not Occasion?) to raise our  
 Gratitude, and improve our Devotion,  
 and inflame our Love towards God, for  
 the abundant Mercies bestowed on us,  
 in the Sufferings and Death of our Sa-  
 viour. Nor can we abstain from this  
 Table of the Lord, without forgetting  
 (indeed without so far renouncing) our  
 Relation to *Christ* crucified, and there-  
 by declaring ourselves utterly unwor-  
 thy of that holy Name whereby we are  
 called. *Verily, verily, except we eat* John vi.  
*the Flesh of the Son of Man, and drink* 53.  
*his Blood, we have no Life in us.*

'Twas his dying Charge to us, *Do* Luke xxii.  
*this in Remembrance of me:* And surely, 16.



S E R M. considering how much he has done and

VI. suffered for us, had he commanded us  
*some hard Thing*, we should not have refused to comply with him: How much less should we refuse, when we are only commanded to remember him, by an Action naturally pleasing and delightful to us? when he invites us only to eat and to drink at his own Table?

*Christ, the same Night that he was betrayed, took Bread:* At that very Time, when Men were laying Snares for his Innocence, and contriving his Ruin, did he appoint this great Means of blessing and strengthening them: When his Body was now about to be pierced, and his Blood to be spilt by the Hand of Violence; then did he institute this Mystery, by which the Merits of both were to be conveyed to the whole Race of Mankind, even to his Murtherers themselves, if by Faith and Repentance they should lay hold of them. Must not our Stupidity and Ingratitude be as amazing as his Love, if the very Circumstances, in which he gave

gave us this Precept, do not incline us SERM.  
to obey it? Can we be said to glory in VI.  
*the Cross of Christ*, while we neglect  
and despise this great *Memorial* of his  
Death, which he instituted for the good  
of Souls? Ought we not rather to fear,  
lest, by abstaining wilfully and con-  
temptuously from this holy Table, we  
should involve ourselves in some De-  
gree of *their* Guilt, whom the Apostle  
declares to *have trodden under Foot the* Heb. x.  
*Son of God*, and counted the Blood of 29.  
*the Covenant*, by which they were sancti-  
fied, an unholy Thing? But finally, we  
may

4. In the *Fourth Place*, be said (very  
properly said) to *glory in the Cross of*  
*Christ*, when we zealously assert, and  
vindicate the true Doctrine of his Sa-  
*tisfaction*, against all the Enemies and  
Opposers of it; against the false No-  
tions of the *Jews*, and the false Reli-  
gion of the *Mahometans*; against the  
mischievous Opinions of some *deceived*,  
or *deceiving Christians*; against the vain  
*Pretences of Reason and Philosophy*,  
and

S E R M. and against the proud *Insults* and *Blas-*

VI. *phemies* of *Atheists* and *Infidels*. But  
 ~~~~~ these Particulars would open too large  
 a Field of Matter to me at present, and
 may perhaps (God permitting) be no
 improper Subject for our Reflections on
 a like Occasion.

In the mean time, let us conclude,
 by rendering to the great Lover of
 Souls the Thanks that are due to Him,
 for the Redemption, which he, as on
 this Day, purchased for us.

Revel. v.
 12.

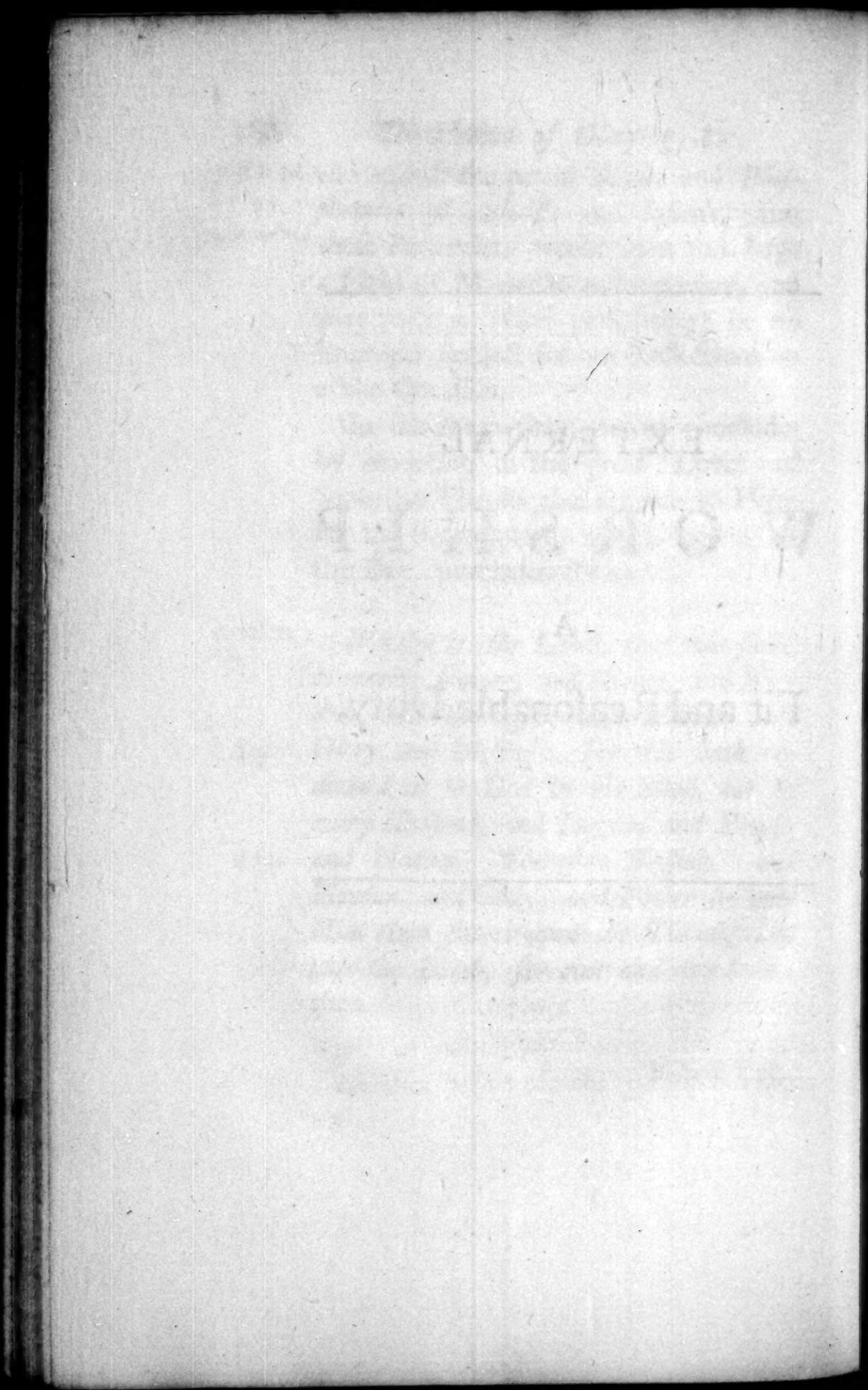
Worthy is the Lamb, that was slain,
to receive Power, and Riches, and Wis-
dom, and Strength, and Honour, and
 † 9. *Glory, and Blessing: For He hath re-*
deemed us to God by his Blood, out of
every Kindred, and Tongue, and People,
 † 13. *and Nation. Therefore Blessing, and*
Honour, and Glory, and Power be unto
Him than sitteth upon the Throne, and
unto the Lamb, for ever and ever! A-
men.

EXTER-

EXTERNAL
WORSHIP

A

Fit and Reasonable Duty.



[189]

The Duty of External Worship :

A
S E R M O N

Preached at the
ROLLS CHAPEL,
April 2, 1699.

P S A L M xcv. 6.

*O come let us worship and bow down ;
let us kneel before the LORD our
Maker.*

TH E S E Words are taken from S E R M.
an Hymn, which is very fitly VII.
placed at the Entrance of the Morning
Devotions of the Church: It being a
solemn and earnest Invitation to the
publick Worship of God that follows ;
and

S E R M. and probably employed to that Purpose
 VII. at the Beginning of the Service used in
 the *Jewish* Temple.

In that Hymn we are called upon to pay all the Parts of our *internal* and *external* Homage.

The Words, which I have chosen, mention only the *latter* of these, *outward Adoration*; which they do, by expressing the several *Modes* of it; as *Worshipping, Bowing down, and Kneeling* before God: *Terms*, which those who are skilled in the Original, have been at some Pains to *explain*, so as to settle the distinct Meaning of *each* of them. I shall wave that Enquiry, as not very useful, and consider the Words in their more free and *general* Sense; as they imply *all* those *devout Postures* of Body, in which *outward* Worship may be supposed to consist.

To press upon you, as effectually as I can, the Exercise of these, when we thus meet together in God's Sanctuary, shall be the Business of my present Discourse.

In

In which I shall endeavour to shew, SERM.
VII.
how requisite a reverent and pious De-
meanour in the publick Service of the
Church is, in order to render our Devo-
tions acceptable to God.

This perhaps, at first sight, may
seem too plain a Proposition to need
any Proof: And it will be thought,
that there is no good *Christian* in the
World, who is not very well satisfied
of the Truth of it. And yet, certain
it is, that there are, among those who
aim at a more than ordinary Purity in
the Worship of God, many sincere but
deluded Persons, who disapprove and
deny it; who think external Modes of
Worship, not only *unnecessary*, but *su-
perstitious*, now under the Gospel Dis-
pensation, when, they say, all *bodily*
Service is done away, the Law of *out-
ward* Rites and Ceremonies is abolish-
ed, and the *true* Worshippers of God
are to *worship him only in Spirit and* John iv.
24.
Truth.

And even among those who admit
the Necessity of *bodily* Worship in the
Theory,

SERM. *Theory*, yet how many are there that

VII. deny it in their *Practice*, and so behave
 ~~~~~ themselves in the publick Service of the  
 Church, as to make it appear, that this  
 Truth has not yet in good earnest  
 reached their Hearts, or not sunk very  
 deep into them: Or if it has, the Im-  
 pressions it once made upon their Minds,  
 are now grown so faint and weak, that  
 they operate but little, unless by proper  
 Arguments and Motives they be con-  
 tinually excited and kept alive in  
 them.

In order therefore to convince those  
 who seem not to have sufficiently *con-*  
*sidered* the Importance of this Duty;  
 and in order also to raise the Devotion  
 of such as are remiss and careless in the  
 Discharge of it; I shall, in what fol-  
 lows, consider *External Worship*, as a  
 fit and reasonable Duty, upon these  
 three several Accounts. Either as one  
 Part of that *natural Homage*, which  
 the *whole* Man, Soul and Body, does,  
 by the first Principles of *Reason*, and  
 Law of his *Nature*, owe to his sove-  
 reign



reign Lord, his great Creator and Pre-<sup>SERM.</sup>  
 server. Or as an *Help* and *Assistance* <sup>VII.</sup>  
 towards promoting the *spiritual* Wor-  
 ship of our *Souls*. Or lastly, as an  
*outward Sign*, by which we express to  
*others* the Religious Esteem and Vene-  
 ration that dwells in *us*: That is (in  
 a Word) it may be considered with  
 relation to *God*, *Ourselves*, or our *Neigh-*  
*bour*.

*First* then, *External* Adoration may I.  
 be considered as a Part of that *natural*  
*Homage*, which the *whole* Man, Soul  
 and Body, owes to God, upon the Ac-  
 count of his Creation and Preservation  
 of us; and his sovereign Dominion  
 over us.

If we are to worship God for the  
 Being, and the Benefits which we re-  
 ceive at his Hands, as the plain Rules  
 of Reason inform us; then does it  
 seem agreeable to the same Reason, that  
 we should make Use of *all* those se-  
 veral Ways of Worship, which do best  
 express the *total* and *entire* Dependance

S E R M. we have on him. The *Soul* worships  
 VII. him, by framing to itself awful Ideas of  
 his Majesty and great Excellencies, by  
 invoking Aid and Assistance from him,  
 and by putting up Praises to him.  
 The *Body* worships him, by bowing  
 and prostrating itself; and by all those  
 humble and devout Postures, which suit  
 best with those *inward* Affections and  
 Dispositions of the Mind. *Both* toge-  
 ther make up that compleat Harmony  
 of Divine Worship, which results from  
 the Agreement of the several Parts of  
 our Frame in the same Acts of Ac-  
 knowledgment, that *Odour of a sweet*  
*Smell, a Sacrifice acceptable, well plea-*  
*sing to God.*

Phil. iv.  
 18.

Indeed, as we have no Way of form-  
 ing to ourselves any Idea of God, but  
 by considering the several limited Per-  
 fections and Excellencies, that are va-  
 riously scattered among his Creatures,  
 and attributing them to *him without*  
*Bounds*; so have we no other Way of  
 applying ourselves to him, as his Vas-  
 sals, his Dependants, and the Works  
 of

of his Hands, than by considering what S E R M.  
 are those *inward* and *outward* Marks VII.  
 of Respect, which we usually pay to   
 the *Dignity* of any *Man* here upon  
 Earth, to his *Authority* over us, or his  
*Beneficence* towards us; and by giving  
 them to *God*, in a much *higher* De-  
 gree, than we do to *Man*. Now, the  
 Expression of our Esteem of any Earth-  
 ly Good, the Respect we bear towards  
 Persons of great Excellence, Parents,  
 Benefactors, or Governors, is contained  
 in these *Two* Things; a Veneration of  
*Mind* for them, and a Submission of  
*Body* to them.

And whoever fails in *either* of these,  
 is, by the general Consent of Mankind,  
 reckoned to be so far wanting in his  
 Duty, and to deviate from those Rules  
 of Subordination, which God has made  
 necessary for this World.

Of this the Mind of Man is very  
 sensible; and being therefore conscious  
 of the superlative Excellencies of the  
 Divine Being, and of the infinite Good-  
 ness of its Nature towards us, finds it-



S E R M. self uneasy under these Apprehensions,

VII.

*W*'till it has paid its *due Homage*, its *Debt* of Honour to it. Which, nevertheless it has no *Ability* to do, otherwise than by applying to *God* those *outward* sensible Marks of Respect, and those *inward* Submissions of Soul, which are in Use among the Sons of *Men*.

To these therefore it flies, these it lays hold of, eager and impatient to do *something* (it knows not well *what*) in humble Acknowledgment of his Attributes, and in Return to his many loving Kindnesses.

It sees very well, how disproportioned all our Acts of Homage are to the Divine Greatness: That God dwells in inaccessible Light, to which none of our Services can reach; in the Glory of an eternal Majesty, which nothing we can do, can either add to, or diminish. Nevertheless perceiving in itself a restless Principle, exciting it continually to the Love and Honour of God; strong Endeavours after Gratitude, and no other Way of exerting them,

them, but by *inward* and *outward* Acts SERM.  
of Worship; these, how insignificant VII.  
soever, it ventures to pay, in sure Con-  
fidence, that they will be grateful to  
that Being, which *accepteth according* 2 Cor. viii.  
*to that a Man bath, and not according* 2.  
*to that he bath not.*

Thus does *External* Adoration be-  
come a Point of *Natural Homage*, due  
to the supreme Lord of the World, in  
Token of that entire Dependence we  
have on him; the Dependence of the  
*whole* Man, *Soul* and *Body*, which *both*  
equally came forth from his Hands, and  
are *both* equally sustained by him. *Both*  
therefore must join in paying the com-  
mon Tribute of Praise; which, how-  
ever to *Him* it may be nothing worth,  
of less Account than *a Drop of the* Is. xl. 15.  
*Bucket*, or *a small Dust of the Bal-*  
*lance*, yet to *Us-ward* is the very *Law*  
of our Nature, and our bounden *Duty*  
and Service.

And *this* is a Way of Reasoning, which  
the Holy Ghost in *both* Testaments hath  
sanctified, and taught us to use.

SERM. We are invited by the good *Psalmist*  
 VII. in my Text, to *bow down, and kneel*  
 before God. And the Reason follows:  
*For he is the Lord our God, and we are*  
*the People of his Hands.* Agreeably to  
 which the Apostle urges us, to *glorify*  
*God in our Body, and in our Spirit,*  
*which are God's.* We are to glorify  
 him in our *Body*, as well as our *Spirit*;  
 by *outward* as well as *inward* Devotion:  
 Since there is the same Argument for  
 both, they are God's: *His* they are,  
 and to *Him* they must do their  
 Homage.

And therefore 'tis a remarkable Pas-  
 sage, which the same Apostle hath:  
 Rom. xii. *I beseech you, Brethren, by the Mer-*  
 1. *cies of God, that you present your Bo-*  
*dies a living Sacrifice, holy, acceptable*  
*unto God; which is your reasonable Ser-*  
*vice.* Though he mentions only the  
 presenting our *Bodies*, yet he gives that  
 the Name of our *reasonable Service*,  
 ἡ λογικὴ λατρεία ὑμῶν, a Worship agree-  
 able to *Reason*, and to the Suggestions of  
 our natural Faculties.

We



We all look for the Glorification, SERM.  
not only of our *Souls*, but *Bodies*, in VII.  
the Life to come. Now a *Reward* ~~~~~

supposeth a *Work*: It is meet and right  
therefore, that we should worship and  
glorify God in *this* Life with the *Body*  
as well as the *Soul*, if so be we expect  
that God should glorify *both our Bo-*  
*dies and Souls in another.* The *outward*  
Worship, without the *inward* is dead;  
and again, the *inward*, without the  
*outward*, is not complete; even as the  
Glorification of the *Soul*, separate from  
the *Body*, is not, nor shall be consum-  
mate, till the *Body* be again raised, and  
reunited to it.

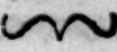
Indeed, they who derogate so much  
from *bodily* Worship in the Service of  
the true God, do by Consequence ren-  
der *Idolatry* a *Sin* far less heinous in  
Degree than it is. For the *Sin of Ido-*  
*latry* consists, we know, in our com-  
municating that Honour to a Creature,  
which is due unto the Creator alone.  
And therefore, in the same Proportion  
as external Worship is due to the Crea-

SERM. tor, will the Grievousness and Guilt  
 VII. of *that* Sin be, by which we transfer  
 ~~~~~ that Worship from the Creator to the  
 Creature; for it cannot be denied, but
 that *Part* of the Sin of *Idolatry* con-
 sists even in the *outward* Worship given
 to an *Idol*. And therefore, if *outward*
 Worship be not insisted on with any
 Strictness now under the Gospel, as a
 Debt due to *God*, neither will the pay-
 ing it to *Idols* be in any high Degree
 culpable.

Thus does the Consideration of *out-ward* Worship, as it respects *God*, the Object of it, afford us one powerful Motive to a composed and solemn Behaviour in the *publick* Service of the Church. Let us see, what Force it will have, as it relates to *ourselves*; Or as it is,

II. *Secondly*, an Help and Assistance, to-wards promoting the spiritual Worship of our *Souls*.

There is so close a *Connexion* between the *Mind* and its *Organs*, that they

they act, as it were, by Consent; and SERM.
the Motions of the *one* do commonly, VII.
and in some Degree, pass into the *other*. 

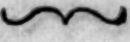
And this natural *Sympathy* shews itself
no where more remarkably than in Acts
of Devotion. When the *Mind* is warm-
ed with heavenly Thoughts, and wrought
up into some Degrees of holy Ecstasy,
it stays not there, but communicates
these Impressions to the *Body*; and ex-
cites those several Actions, without, that
carry a Resemblance to what is done
within.

On the *other* Side, devout Postures
of *Body*, when perceived and attended
to by him that uses them, do *as* cer-
tainly pass onward and impart their
Force to the *Mind* also; raising there
those several Passions and Emotions, to
which the outward Act is naturally
conjoined. 'Tis true, the Rise of all
is originally from *within*; *there* the
Springs of Action first begin to play;
and from *thence* Orders are sent out
to the *Body*, what Motions shall arise.
But then, after that, *this Engine*, thus
moved

SERM. moved, acts backward upon its first Principle, the *Soul*; returns the Force, that was lent it from thence, with Interest; and improves that *Spark* of holy Fire, which first sprung up there, into a great and mighty *Flame*.

External Worship then becomes this way a just and reasonable *Duty*, inasmuch as it is naturally fitted to excite like *inward* Acts of Devotion; and being itself perceived, does, in a Way not perceived by those who yet feel the Effects of it, work upon the most hidden Powers of the Mind. And it is very well it does so: For the Mind of Man is in the Duties of Religion so little *Mistress* of strict Attention, so unable to fix itself steadily even on God, its best and worthiest Object, that it cannot have too many Assistances from *without*, in order to it. As therefore God hath so tempered the *Body* together in all its *Members*, that the *Eye* cannot say unto the *Hand*, *I have no need of thee*; nor the *Head* again unto the *Feet*, *I have no need of you*; so has he
also

1 Cor. xii.
21.

also tempered the *whole Frame* of Man SERM.
in such a Manner, as that the Parts of VII.
it may mutually support each other. 

Nor can the *Soul*, in its most spiritual
and sublime Acts, those of Devotion,
reject the *Body*, as useless and unassist-
ing. *Nay much more* (as St. Paul con- 1 Cor. xii.
tinues his Reasoning) *that Part, which* ^{22.}
seems to be more feeble, is necessary.

We usually blame the *Body* to an
high Degree, as the great Clog and
Hindrance of the *Soul*; the Obstructor
of its free and natural Motions, the
Offerer of impious, of filthy, of vain
Images; the Sollicitor to every evil Act,
all that defiles the Man. And this is
generally what *may* be said of it, with
a great deal of Justice. For it *is* all
this, and it *does* all this in a thousand
several Instances. But in the Case of
Devotion now before us, Things may
be far otherwise managed, and the Bo-
dy rendered so useful and serviceable
to the Soul in *this* Duty, as to make
Amends (as it were) for the Obstruc-
tions it gives it in the Performance
of

S E R M. of many *others*. Here it may be made

VII. to draw equally in the Yoke of Duty:
 Nay even to give *Wings* to the Mind,
 which it presseth down, and overwhelms
 on many other Occasions. Nor is the
 Body more beholden to the *Soul*, for
 the *Beginning* of its Motions, than the
Soul afterwards is to the *Body*, for the
Increase of hers. But

III. *Thirdly*, We have still another Way
 of considering *outward* Worship, as it is
 a *Sign*, by which we express to *others*
 the religious Esteem and Veneration that
 dwells in *us*. And we shall find, that
 from hence too we are highly obliged
 to the most solemn and devout *Use* of
 it. For as in the former Instances it
 has appeared to be an Instrument of
God's Honour, and our *own* particular
 Advantage, so here we shall find that
 it reaches even to the common Good of
 our *Neighbour* too.

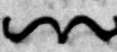
And certainly great are the Advan-
 tages which the People of God, when
 they are met together, do mutually
 receive

receive from it. The *cold* and remiss SERM.

Worshipper is, at the Sight of an exem- VII.

plary Piety, kindled into some Degrees of holy *Warmth*; the *fervent* and devout, in the Presence of it, becomes *yet more* enflamed. A religious Emulation rises then in the Breasts of the *Faithful*, an holy Strife and Desire of excelling. He that sees *another* composed in his Behaviour throughout, and fixed down to the holy Duty he is engaged in, grows ashamed of his own Indifference and Indecencies, his spiritual Dissipations and Dryness, and presently sets himself to imitate that amiable Pattern, and resolves to be remarkably devout, and as much the Object of *other* Mens Imitation.

But *Believers* are not the only Persons, that receive Benefit by it; *Unbelievers* too, tho' unwillingly, have their Share. The profane Scoffer, who dares encounter a *single Christian*, without Shame or Fear of Reproof, has here an Answer to his bold Scoffs, in that still and powerful Argument, which

S E R M. which arises from the Behaviour of a
 VII. devout Multitude, worshipping God in
 *the Beauty of Holiness*: Such an Argument as will destroy all his unreasonable Suspicions, and convince him of the Sincerity of Mens Hearts towards God, by the natural unaffected Signs of it, which are shewn in his Service: Such as will put him in mind of the Numbers of devout and good Men, against which he engages; lead him on from the Thought of the present Congregation to those of the same kind that are spread over the Face of the Earth; and make him sit down and consider, whether with such a small Strength (his own, and that of a few more) he can encounter so many Thousands, even the united Wisdom and Practice of Mankind. Surely, as St. Paul argues in relation to the Propheying practised in the Primitive Church, *if all thus worship, and there cometh in one that believeth not, or one unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all. And thus are*

1 Cor. xiv.
 24, 25.

are the Secrets of his Heart made manifest; and so falling down on his Face, he will worship God, and report, that God is in you of a Truth. SERM. VII.

Thus have I explained the several Grounds, on which external Adoration stands, and the several good Uses, to which it may be employed; how much the Honour of God depends upon it, the Advancement of Piety in our own Breast, and in that of our Neighbour. And sure I need exhort you but briefly to the Practice of that, which appears every way so plain and so reasonable a Duty. Let us then lay up these Thoughts in our Hearts, and keep our Feet (as the Wise Man speaks) when we go to the Sanctuary, by a careful Reflection upon them! Let us carry in our Ears always when we enter into the Place of God's publick Worship, the Sound of those Expressions he used to Moses out of the flaming Bush: Put off thy Shoes from thy Feet for the Place whereon thou standest is holy Ground! Exod. iii.

Let

SERM. Let us consider with ourselves, if
 VII. such and so many are the *Advantages*
 that spring from a due Care of *external*
 Behaviour, how great must the Incon-
 veniences then be, that arise from the
 Neglect of it? from an *indecent and*
slowly Worship; a Worship fit neither
 for God, who is a God of Beauty and
 Order, to *receive*; nor for Man, who
 is the only Creature in this lower
 World that has a Sense of these Things,
 to *pay*. Surely nothing less can fol-
 low from so *loose* a Practice, than
 the *Decay* of Religion in all its vital
 and substantial Parts; a Forgetfulness
 of that God, whom to have always
 in our Thoughts is the greatest *Pre-*
servative against Sin that a Christian
 Man can have; the Derisions of the
 Proud towards these our solemn Meet-
 ings, and the open Scorn of every thing
 that is holy.

From the primitive Writers of the
 Story of the Church we learn, that the
first Christians, who were so exempla-
 ry in all the Parts of Christian Duty,
 above

above those of *latter* Times, outstripped S E R M.
 us in nothing more than in the *out-* VII.
ward Marks of Devotion and Re-
 vidence, which appeared upon them in
 their publick Assemblies. They re-
 sorted to the House of God with the
 same holy Awe and Reverence, as if
 they were really to meet, and to con-
 verse with him there: They conti-
 nued, during the Time of Divine Ser-
 vice, immoveably fixed to their Duty,
 without the least Sign or Token of a
 wandering, or alienated Mind. They
 contented not themselves with the *or-*
inary Postures of Devotion, such as
 Genuflection, the Bowing of the Head
 or the Body, but did (as one of the
 Ancients speaks) prostrate themselves on
 the Pavement, cover it with their Bo-
 dies, and wash it with Tears of devout
 Joy.

God grant, that if these Heights of
 Devotion be too exalted for an Age so
 degenerate as this, in which *Iniquity*
abounds and *the Love of many is waxen*
cold; yet, at least, that *so much* of the

SERM. Life and Spirit of *Primitive Piety* may

VII. be kept up among us, as may render

*W*our Behaviour *sober and composed* in the Use of holy Things, and take away from wicked Men an Occasion to blaspheme!

Now to God the Father, &c.

External

External WORSHIP

Shewn to be of no

E F F I C A C Y,

Unless accompanied with

Internal DEVOTION.

Together with

The Excellent CONTRIVANCE of
the *Church of England Service* to pro-
mote the *latter*.

External Worship

From the 1st to the 15th

FRIDAY

United Methodist Church

Internal Devotion

From the 16th to the 31st

The Internal Devotion of
the Church of the United Methodist
is the basis of all other

External Worship not sufficient alone :

A
S E R M O N

Preached at

St. JAMES's Chapel,

In the YEAR 1711-12.

LAMENT. iii. 14.

*Let us lift up our Hearts, with our
Hands, unto God in the Heavens.*

THESE are the Words of *Jere-* SERM.
miah, spoken to the *Jews* of VIII.
his Time, who were very exact and
punctual in the *outward* Ceremonies
and Performances of Religion, but very
deficient in the *inward* Life and
Reality of it. They resorted to the
P 3 Temple

SERM. Temple constantly, and were careful

VIII. to practise the various Rites which the
 Law of *Moses* prescribed: But they did
 not bring along with them a Disposition of *Soul* suitable to those Solemnities; their Mind was alienated from the Service, even while they were performing it. The Prophet, sensible of this great Defect in their way of Worship, thus exhorts them to the Cure of it. *Let us lift up our Hearts* (says he) *with our Hands, unto God in the Heavens.*

Which Words refer to the *Jews*, as performing the *Publick* Service of their Church in the Temple or the Synagogue; and imply, that the Devotion of the *Hand*, without that of the *Heart*, is of no Acceptance with God; that
 1 Tim. iv. 8. *bodily Exercise* (in this Sense of the Word) *profiteth but little*, unless accompanied with an holy Warmth and Elevation of *Mind*.

This is a very plain but unregarded Truth: Many *Christians* there are, who seem not to be thoroughly convinced

vinced of it; and the best of us, God knows (such is the Infirmary of our Nature) want sometimes to be awakened into a vigorous and lively Sense of it.

SERM.

VIII.

Many Frequenters of such religious Assemblies as these, think their Duty sufficiently discharged by a punctual and regular Attendance upon them. If they are present during the Time of Divine Service, if they take their Share in the several Parts of it, join in the *Hymns* and the *Responses*, and add their *Amen* to the Prayers; if their *outward* Behaviour be every way decent, and agreeable to the holy Usages of the Church; tho' they are *inwardly* absent from the Duty, wherein they seem to be engaged, and their wandring Thoughts are employed all the while on foreign and vain Objects; yet shall they go away satisfied and justified in their own Conceit, as if they had performed the whole of their reasonable Service, and not offered *the Sacrifice of Fools*; — forgetting the Reproof which

Eccl. v. 1.

SERM. *Esaïas* first gave to the whole *Jewish*

VIII. Nation, and which our Saviour applied

particularly to the *Scribes* and *Phari-*

sees: *This People draweth nigh unto me*
 Mat. xv. 8. *with their Mouths, and honoureth me*

with their Lips; but their Heart is far
from me.

That such a *Mock Worship* as this, such a mere Face and Form of Devotion, is not what God requires, what he will hearken to, or reward, give me leave briefly to shew, by observing, how unproportioned it is to the *Divine Nature*, and our *Own*, to the great *End* and *Design* of Prayer, and to those mighty *Blessings* and *Benefits*, with which, when duly performed, it is certainly attended.

The *Object* of our religious Addres-
 ses is *God; that God, who is a Spirit;*
 John iv. 24. and who therefore will be worshipped
in Spirit (as our Saviour argues) with
 all the Faculties and Powers of our
 Mind, with the utmost Intention and
 Vigour of Thought: And he therefore,
 who lifts up his *Hands* to him, without
 any

not sufficient alone.

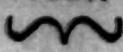
217

any Elevation of his *Heart*, Affronts him, instead of Adoring him. *Bless the Lord, O my Soul, and all that is within me bless his holy Name!* says good *David*. He summons every Faculty and Affection of his Soul, *all that is within him*, to do Homage to God, as knowing that the mere *Outward* Homage, unaccompanied by the *Inward*, would be a Lifeless and Useless Performance. What! do we hope to impose upon *God*, as we sometimes do upon *Men*, by a mere *Form of Godliness*, without the *Power of it*? Do we think, that he requires our Adoration and Homage for his *own* Sake; and therefore contents himself with the Honours that are done him by *outward* Shews and Appearances? He, *who requireth Truth in the inward* Psal. li. 6.
Parts, to whom all Things are naked Heb. iv.
and open, and who tryeth the very ^{13.} Psal. vii. 9.
Hearts and Reins! He, whose Language in holy Writ is, *My Son, give me thy Heart!* Give me thy Heart, ^{26.} Prov. xxiii.
whilst thou art performing any Part
of

SERM. of thy Duty that relates either to *Me*,
 VIII. thy *self* or thy *Neighbour*; but chiefly
 give me thy *Heart*, whilst thou art
 immediately addressing thyself to me
 by *Prayer* and *Praise*; whilst thou art
 actually *Conversing* with me, *Intreat-*
ing and *Adoring* me: *Give me thy*
Heart at such a *Time*; or else *all* that
 thou givest me besides, will prove a
vain Oblation. Again,

Let us consider our *own* Nature as
 well as that of the *Divine* Being. Are
 we not *Reasonable* Creatures? And
 ought not a *Reasonable* Creature to pay
 an *entire* and *reasonable* Service? How
 can *We* be said to worship God, while
 the better half of us is unconcerned in
 the Act? It is the *Mind*, chiefly, that
 is the *Man*; and where the *Mind* there-
 fore is absent, the *Man* is not present:
 He offers not a living and a breathing
 Victim, but a dead and lifeless Carcass;
 and *with such a Sacrifice how can God*
be well pleased?

What is *Prayer*, but an Ascent of
 the *Mind* towards God? an holy En-
 gine,

gine, by which we lift up our Spirits to SERM.
 the great Father of Spirits; maintain a VIII.
 sweet Intercourse with him, and breath 
 out, from the Bottom of our Hearts,
 our common Desires and Acknowledg-
 ments to him? And what is there of
 this, in *coming unto him, as his People* Ezek.
cometh, in sitting before him as his People xxxiii. 31.
sitteth; in shewing much Love with our
Mouth, while our Heart goeth after its
Covetousness?

Wondrous is the *Efficacy* of Prayer,
 as represented in Scripture; mighty
 Things are there said to have been
 done in virtue of it. But how were
 they done? by the mere bending of
 the Knees, and uttering of Words and
 Syllables? No! but by the Attention
 of the Heart, by Zeal, and Fervency.
 It is only *the fervent Prayer of a righ-* James v.
teous Man, that availeth much: And 16.
 when *Elias*, by his prevalent Interpo-
 sition with God, shut up or opened
 the Heavens, brought Drought or Rain
 upon the Earth, it is said of him,

ωρσο- James v.
17.

S E R M O N *ὑποταχῆς καὶ ἐνθουσιασμοῦ*, that he prayed ar-
 VIII. | dently and earnestly.

Indeed this Qualification of *Prayer* is enjoined us by God; not only as a becoming Expression of our religious Reverence towards him; but as a proper and natural Means of working in our Souls those good Dispositions, which his blessed Spirit delights in, and delights to reward. We are directed to ask with a fixed and fervent Mind, because such a Manner of asking fits and qualifies us for receiving; makes us humble, submissive, dependent, affects us with a deep Sense of our own Insufficiency and Unworthiness, and of the Divine Bounty and Goodness; suspends the evil Motions and Desires of our Hearts for a time; and produces in us an heavenly Frame and Temper of Soul. This is the nearest and most immediate Effect of *Prayer*, which must first be obtained, in order to the obtaining of our Requests. And how therefore can he,
 who

who is a Stranger to the *One* of these, SERM.
ever hope to arrive at the *Other*? VIII.

Can we imagine that Pardon of Sin, and Peace of Conscience; the Fruits of the Spirit, and Support against Temptations; in a Word, the Blessings of this World and the next, with which God has promised to reward our Prayers, should be purchased at the cheap Expence of Forms and Appearances? That those Devotions which affect not *Us* first, should affect *God* afterwards? That he should attend to, or regard such Requests, as we neither regard, nor attend to ourselves?

Let us then not mock God, and deceive ourselves! Let us not think we have fulfilled our Duty merely by resorting to the Church, and adding one to the Number of the Congregation; by doing as other Men do, and saying as other Men say there; nor hope to atone by an outwardly decent Behaviour, for an inwardly alienated Mind. But let us, under a due Sense of the preceding Reflections, whenever we

S E R M. we come to the House of God, not fail
 VIII. to come *whole* and entire; to *offer and*
 present unto God (as the Liturgy speaks)
ourselves, our Souls, and Bodies, to be
a reasonable, holy and lively Sacrifice to
him: let us resolve to *worship* him, not
 with our Lips and Knees only, but (as
 (as we are obliged to *love* him) *even with*
 Mark xi. *all our Heart, and with all our Soul,*
 30. *and with all our Mind, and with all our*
Strength!

God be thanked, by whose good
 Providence we are Members of a
 Church, where the publick Offices of
 Religion are so modelled and contriv-
 ed, as to be apt, in every Part of them,
 to raise the *Attention*, and kindle an
 holy Flame in the *Breasts* of all sincere
 Worshipers. I cannot better spend
 the remaining Part of my Time, than
 in pointing out to you the *great Ad-*
vantages which we, in this Respect,
 enjoy, and by that Means shewing you,
 how *inexcusable* we are, if we neglect
 to improve them, *more inexcusable* than
 the Members of any other Church, or
 Commu-

not sufficient alone.

223

Communion in the Christian World. SERM.
For, VIII.

I. The *Language*, wherein our Service is performed, cannot but be of use to fix and keep alive our *Attention*. 'Tis our own Mother Tongue, what all of us are acquainted with; and can therefore listen to with Ease and Delight, because we understand it. There *is* a Church, whose publick Prayers are put up in a Language unknown to the greatest Part of those who are to join in them. But how can the Heart be affected by the mere *Sound* of Words, while it is utterly a Stranger to their *Meaning*? The publick Devotions therefore of an unlettered *Papist*, must needs be one continued Scene of Distractions and Wanderings, from the Beginning to the End of them.

Nor are our Offices drawn up only in our *own* Tongue, but in the most easy and plain Parts of it, which lie open to *Christians* of the meanest Capacities and Attainments. There is nothing fantastical in the Expression of
them,

SERM. them, no vain Use of such hard Phrases

VIII. of Scripture, as tend rather to amuse

and puzzle, than to instruct common Hearers; nothing which approaches to that mysterious, unintelligible Way of Speaking, in which some either deceiving, or deceived Christians delight; nothing that favours of Singularity, Hypocrisy, or Enthusiasm. Whatever we meet with there, is plain, simple, natural; and yet at the same time solemn, majestick, moving; significant and full, sound and wholesome: It carries both Light and Heat in it, and is fitted equally to inform the Understandings and inflame the Affections of the wisest and weakest of *Christians*. I need not say how far this Excellence of our Service contributes to rouse and inspirit the Attention of those who partake of it; *especially*, if it be considered,

2. That these Prayers and Praises are offered up in a *premeditated* Form of Words, with which every one is before acquainted: For *this* also I must reckon

reckon among the peculiar Advantages SERM.
of our Way of Worship, towards fast- VIII.
ening down the Minds of Men to that 
holy Duty, wherein they are engaged.
I grant, indeed, that *Unpremeditated*
Prayers, uttered with great Fluency,
with a devout Warmth and Earnest-
ness, are apt to make strong and a-
wakening Impressions on the Minds of
the Generality of Hearers. But it may
be doubted, whether the Attention
thus raised, be *that* which we are now
recommending; whether it be not an
Attention rather of Curiosity and Sur-
prize, than of a real Piety and sound
Devotion. For a good and conscien-
tious Man, who is to join in a Prayer,
with which he was before unacquaint-
ed, must needs do it with some little
Diffidence and Fear, lest there should
be any Thing in the *Matter* or *Man-
ner* of that Prayer, improper and un-
becoming: He must suspend his Assent
to those *unknown* Requests, 'till he has
so far considered them, as to be sure
that they are fit for him to agree in.

SERM. And while he is thus employing his

VIII. Thoughts on *one* Petition or Sentence,
 another succeeds, which will require a
 like Degree of Suspence and Delibera-
 tion: And this cannot but check his
 Devotion, by dividing and breaking
 the Force of his Mind. Whereas he,
 who offers up his Requests to God in
 a known and stated Form, has no Avoca-
 tions of this Kind to struggle with;
 and can therefore apply himself directly
 and vigorously to his holy Task, and
 James i. 6. *ask in Faith, nothing doubting.* He
 fears not, lest unfitting Requests should
 be made, or fit ones clothed in unsuit-
 able Language; and is therefore at Lei-
 sure to excite all the Powers and Af-
 fections of his Soul, and to engage
 them in that spiritual Service. This,
 I say, is a peculiar Advantage, which
 attends the Use of precomposed Prayers;
 and if there be many, who do not find
 and feel this Effect of them, it is not,
 I am persuaded, the Fault of *set Forms*,
 but *their own*: They want Attention
 and Fervency in *this* Way of Worship;
 and

not sufficient alone.

227

and they would want it *equally*, perhaps *much more* in any *other*.

S E R M.
VIII.

3. It is yet a farther great Advantage which we of this Communion enjoy, that our Service is not one continued Act of Devotion, but is interrupted by many little Breaks and Pauses, and consists of several distinct and entire Forms of Petition and Praise; by which Means the Mind is eased and relieved from too long and strict an Attention; retires a little, and returns, as it were, with new Strength to its Duty. The *Collects* of our Liturgy are so *short*, that a devout *Christian* may, even whilst he is pronouncing his *Amen* at the *close*, by a sudden Glance of Thought, recollect every Branch of them; and so contract into that single Word the whole Force of the preceding Prayer. Nay, the very Frame and Contrivance of these *Collects*, is highly useful to raise and to enliven our Devotions, inasmuch as they generally begin with the awful Mention of some of God's Attributes, and always end with re-

Q 2

minding

SERM. reminding us of the Blood and Intercession of *Jesus*. And what Considerations in Religion are there more operative and more awakening than *these*, which return so often upon our Minds, during the Course of our excellent Service?

4. *Which* contributes also to render us attent and devout, by that useful and affecting *Variety*, with which it abounds. There is in it a *Variety* of all Sorts of religious Duty, in which a Creature can apply itself to its Creator. *There* we confess our Sins, and intercede with God for the Pardon of them: *There* we deprecate the divine *Judgments* that may be inflicted, and pray for all the *Blessings* (Spiritual and Temporal) that can be bestowed on ourselves, or others; and there we put up our *Praises* and *Thanksgivings* to God for all the Instances of his Mercy and Goodness towards us. *There* we hear the holy Scriptures read, and profess our Belief of the great Articles of Faith: And these different Parts of
divine

not sufficient alone.

229

divine Worship are so happily inter-
mixed, and succeed each other in so
beautiful an Order, that the Mind of
the Worshipper has always a new and
pleasing Employment.

S E R M.

VIII.

As the Priest has his Share in the
Performance of these Offices, so the
People too have theirs; and in a much
larger Proportion, than belongs to them
in any other Christian Assemblies. *Each*
is employed in stirring up the *other* in-
to an holy and affectionate Emulation of
Heart and Voice; and they do there-
fore *mutually* provoke and kindle each
others Devotion.

5. I add also (in the *last* Place) that
the Service of our Sanctuary is particu-
larly contrived to promote Attention by
the *decent, orderly, and solemn Manner*,
in which it is performed. For it is
neither on the one Side so very plain
and simple, as not to be able to rouse;
nor on the other so splendid and gaw-
dy, as to be apt to distract the Mind.
It is duly tempered between these *Ex-*
trems, and partakes of either, as far

Q3

as

SERM. as either is requisite towards creating
 VIII. and cherishing a sound and reasonable,
 ~~~~~ a warm and active Devotion. Pictures  
 indeed, and Images, to which the  
 Church of *Rome* in this Case has re-  
 course, fix the Attention; but it is on  
 a wrong *Object*. A Multitude of vain  
 and pompous Ceremonies, a Variety of  
 rich Habits and Ornaments, Musick  
 framed for Delight, without Improve-  
 ment: These Things indeed may ren-  
 der an Assembly attent; but so likewise  
 would a Scene in the Theatre. The  
 Devotion they produce (if indeed they  
 produce any) goes no farther than the  
 Senses; it is not that of the Heart and  
 Spirit. But with us, all the *outside* of  
 our Worship contributes towards the  
*inward* Life and Reality of it: Our  
 Churches are decently adorned; they  
 who officiate at our Altars, are decently  
 habited; our daily Service is perform-  
 ed, and our Sacraments administred  
 in a becoming and reverend Manner;  
 our Musick is always, or always ought  
 to be, grave and solemn. Every Part  
 and

*not sufficient alone.*

231

and Circumstance of our Worship is so S E R M.  
ordered, as to inspire us with an holy VII.  
Reverence and Awe, and so far to keep ~~~~~  
the outward Senses awake, as their Vigilance may be of use to give Wings to our Devotion, and Vigour to our Minds.

Since therefore we have so many signal Helps and Advantages towards worshipping God in his Sanctuary with an heavenly Frame and Temper of Soul, let us resolve from this Moment to make a due Use of them; to repair often to the House of God with holy Reverence and Awe, and *to lift up our Hearts, together with our Hands, whenever we thus approach him, in the Beauty of Holiness.*

*Which that we may all of us do, God of his infinite Mercy grant, &c.*

Q 4

T H E



0.11 1

---

THE  
USEFULNESS  
OF  
CHURCH MUSICK.

---

THE  
USEFULNESS  
OF  
CHURCH MUSIC



---

---

*The Usefulness of Church Musick :*

---

A  
S E R M O N

Preached on  
St. CECILIA's Day,  
In the YEAR 1698.

---

PSAL. lvii. 7, 8.

*My Heart is fixed, O God, my Heart  
is fixed ; I will sing, and give Praise.  
Awake up, my Glory ! awake Psal-  
tery, and Harp ! I myself will awake  
right early.*

**I**T is the *Man after God's Heart*, SERM.  
whose Words these are ; and in IX.  
them he points out to us one of the  
chief Methods, by which he became so :  
Even

SERM.

IX.

Even by preparing and qualifying his *own* Heart in the best Manner that he could, for the Duties of the Sanctuary; and by endeavouring, when he assisted at those Solemnities, to perform them with the utmost Attention, Alacrity, and holy Warmth of Mind, of which he was capable.

He enters not on the divine Praises, 'till he finds himself in such a Posture, and under such a Composure of Mind, as suits with that holy Employment: *My Heart is fixed*, says he, *O God, my Heart is fixed*: Then, and then only, it is Time for him to go on, and say, *I will sing, and give Praise*. And that he may be sure to preserve, to feed, and to improve the good Disposition he is in, he calls to his Aid those excellent Helps to Devotion, which he had so often tried with so good Success; *Vocal* and *Instrumental Musick*: *Awake up, my Glory*, says he, *awake Psaltery and Harp!* By his *Glory* he means his *Tongue*, the most noble Organ of the Body of Man, especially when

when employed in celebrating the Praise S E R M.  
and Glory of God. By *Psaltery and* IX.  
*Harp* (which alone are mentioned) we  
must understand all the several Instru-  
ments of Musick, which were, by his  
Appointment, brought into the Temple-  
worship: And with these Assistances,  
these Encouragements, he ventures now  
to undertake for himself, that he will  
maintain that lively Erection of Mind,  
with which he enters on the divine  
Service, throughout the whole Course  
of it; that he will rouse up every Fa-  
culty, Affection, and Power of his  
Soul, and keep them fixed to the holy  
Work they are about, without Distrac-  
tion or Wandring: *I myself will awake*,  
says he. And when he adds to all this,  
that he will do it *right early*, he inti-  
mates to us the particular Time, at  
which such Resolutions as these are best  
executed; 'tis in the *Morning*, the Sea-  
son of Devotion, when the Mind is  
fresh and vigorous, untired with the  
Business of the Day, and untainted with  
ill Images and Impressions.

This



SERM. This I take to be the full Import of

IX. those Words of the devout *Psalmist*,  
 which I have read to you; and which,  
 I think, I may now not improperly dis-  
 course on under these Propositions: By  
 shewing you,

- I. *First*, That the great Thing which recommends our publick Devotions to God, is, our performing them, with an awakened, fixed, and lively Attention of the Mind. That therefore,
- II. *Secondly*, All the pious Helps, and Expedients, that conduce to this End, are to be laid hold of; particularly those which the Text points out to us, the Use of *vocal* and *instrumental* Harmony.
- III. *Thirdly*, That the *Way* of performing divine Service *in the Church of England*, is better fitted to promote this good End [the fixing our Attention, and enflaming our Affections] than any *other* publick Form of Devotions

votions now practised in the Christian S E R M.  
*World*: That it enjoys this Advantage, IX.  
 as in several *other* Respects, so particu-  
 larly in relation to a solemn and decent  
 Use of *Church Musick*.

Which *Three* Points being made out,  
 I shall close with a *Fourth*; wherein I IV.  
 shall briefly, but earnestly exhort you,  
 to make your Devotion *exemplary*, in  
 Proportion to those Advantages, which  
 you above all others enjoy.

*First*, I am to shew you, that the I.  
 great Thing which recommends our  
 publick Devotions to God, is, our per-  
 forming them with an awakened, fixed,  
 and lively Attention of Mind.

Our Worship is composed, as we  
 ourselves are, of a *Body*, and a *Soul*:  
 the *Body* is the outward ceremonious  
 Part; the Devotion of the Lips, of  
 the Hands, and of the Knees, all that  
 lies open to the Sense and Observation  
 of others; but the *Life and Soul* of  
 the Duty consists in those inward Acts  
 of

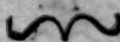
SERM. of Adoration and Love, Intercession and

IX. Thanksgiving, Submission and Trust,

whereof *God*, and *we* ourselves only are conscious. This *unseen* Homage is that, which animates and sanctifies what is *visible*; and without this, all the *outward* Shew, and Form of Devotion, is of no Acceptance, no Value; a lifeless and an useless Performance.

Indeed under the *Jewish* Dispensation a Regard was had to the mere *Externals* of Religion: From a gross and carnal People tied down to earthly Expectations and sensible Objects, God was pleased, in some measure, to accept a gross and carnal Service, and to hinder them by that Means, from falling into downright *Idolatry*, a mighty Propension to which they had contracted during their Stay in *Egypt*. They were to be distinguished and kept separate from all other Nations, by a peculiar Body of Rites and Ceremonies; and these Rites and Ceremonies therefore being useful to this End, derived some Value also from it; especially, being



being all of them such, as had a typical SERM.  
 Reference to more vital and substan- IX.  
 tial Duties, and were *Shadows* and Em-   
 blems of good Things to come: The

Virtue of which, they, by the divine Appointment, did not only represent, but impart also to such as performed them. But this typical State being at an end, a more pure and perfect Institution succeeded; a more refined and spiritual Worship was set up, in which the Mind *is* all, and *does* all; and in which *outward* Observances have no otherwise a Place, than as they serve, either to testify the *inward* Affections of our Hearts to *others*, or to excite and improve them in *ourselves*. A

Worship every way proportioned to the Nature of *God*, who is to *receive* it; and to the Nature of *Man*, who is to *pay* it; and to the *End* and *Use* also of such religious Duties, which is, not merely to express our Homage to God, or to procure a Return from him; but also to work in our Minds all those good Dispositions and Graces, which

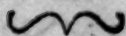
SERM. we are so earnest to obtain; and to be

IX. at once a necessary *Condition*, and a proper and natural Means also of spiritual Improvement. And this is remarkably the Case of *such* Prayers as are put up with Application of Mind, with Zeal and Fervency: Our very asking in such a *manner* fits and qualifies us for receiving; makes us resigned, submissive, dependent; affects us with a deep Sense of our own Insufficiency and Unworthiness, and of the divine Bounty and Goodness; suspends the evil Motions and Desires of our Hearts for a Time, and puts us every Way into that holy and humble Frame of Mind, which God delights in, and delights to reward.

A great deal more might be said, to shew, how requisite it is, to approach God in his Worship, with an awakened, fixed, and lively Attention of Soul; if either *this* were a *Point*, which any good and pious Man doubted of, or were intended to be dwelt on in this Discourse any farther, than as it leads the

the Way to *those* which follow. The SERM.  
next of which is,

IX.



Secondly, That therefore all such pi- II.  
ous Helps and Expedients as conduce  
to this great End, are to be laid hold  
of; particularly those which the Text  
points out to us, *Vocal* and *Instrumental*  
Harmony. The Use of *these* in Di-  
vine Service, I shall now recommend  
and justify, from this Consideration:  
That they do, when wisely employed  
and managed, contribute extremely to  
awaken the Attention, and enliven the  
Devotion of all serious and sincere  
*Christians*.

And their Usefulness to this End  
will appear on a double Account, both  
as they remove the ordinary *Hinder-*  
*ances* of Devotion, and as they supply  
us further with special *Helps and Ad-*  
*vantages* towards quickening and im-  
proving it.

By the melodious Harmony of the  
Church, the ordinary *Hinderances* of  
Devotion are removed, particularly these

R 2

*three;*



SERM. *three*: That *Engagement* of Thought,

IX. which we often bring with us into the  
 Church from what we last conversed  
 with; those *accidental Distractions*,  
 that may happen to us during the  
 Course of Divine Service; and that  
*Weariness* and *Flatness* of Mind, which  
 some *weak* Tempers may labour un-  
 der, by reason even of the *Length*  
 of it.

When we come into the Sanctuary  
 immediately from any worldly Affair  
 (as our very Condition of Life does,  
 alas! force many of us to do) we  
 come usually with divided and alienat-  
 ed Minds. The Business, the Pleasure,  
 or the Amusement we left, sticks fast  
 to us; and perhaps engrosses that Heart  
 for a Time, which should then be tak-  
 en up altogether in spiritual Addresses.  
 But as soon as the Sound of the sacred  
 Hymns strike us, all that busy Swarm  
 of Thoughts presently disperses: By a  
 grateful Violence we are forced into  
 the Duty that is going forward, and,  
 as indeavour and backward as we were  
 before,

before, find ourselves on the sudden seiz- S E R M.  
 ed with a sacred Warmth, and ready IX.  
 to cry out with holy *David*; *my Heart*  
*is fixed, O God, my Heart is fixed! I*  
*will sing, and give Praise.* Our Misap-  
 plication of Mind, at such Times, is  
 often so great, and we so deeply immer-  
 sed in it, that there needs some very  
 strong and powerful Charm to rouse us  
 from it; and perhaps nothing is of great-  
 er Force to this Purpose, than the so-  
 lemn and awakening *Airs of Church*  
*Musick.*

For the same Reason, those *acciden-  
 tal Distractions* that may happen to  
 us, during the Course of the Service,  
 are also best cured by it. The *strong-  
 est* Minds, and best practised in holy  
 Duties, may sometimes be surprized  
 into a Forgetfulness of what they are  
 about, by some violent outward Im-  
 pressions; and every slight Occasion  
 will serve to call off the Thoughts of  
 no less willing, though much *weaker*  
 Worshipers. Those that come to *see*,  
 and to be *seen* here, will often gain  
 R 3 their

SERM.  
IX.

their Point, will draw and detain for a while the Eyes of the Curious, or the Unwary. A *Passage* in the sacred Story read, an Expression used in the common Forms of Devotion, shall raise a *foreign* Reflection perhaps in musing and speculative Minds, and lead them on from Thought to Thought, and Point to Point, till they are bewildered in their own Imagination. *These*, and an Hundred *other* Avocations will arise, and prevail ; but when the *Instruments* of Praise begin to sound, our *scattered* Thoughts presently take the Alarm, return to their Post, and to their Duty, preparing and arming themselves against their spiritual *Affailants*.

*Lastly*, Even the *Length* of the Service itself becomes an *Hinderance* sometimes to the Devotion, which it was meant to feed and raise : For, alas ! we quickly tire in the Performance of holy Duties ; and as eager and unwearied as we are in attending upon *secular* Business, and trifling Concerns,



cerns, yet in *divine* Offices, I fear, the SERM.  
 Expoftulation of our Saviour is appli- IX.  
 cable to moft of us: *What! can ye not* ~~~~~  
*watch with me one Hour?* This *Infir-*  
*mity* is relieved, this *Hindrance* pre-  
 vented or removed, by the fweet *Har-*  
*mony* that accompanies feveral Parts of  
 the Service, and returning upon us at  
 fit *Intervals*, keeps our Attention up  
 to the Duty, when we begin to flag,  
 and makes us infenfible of the *Length*  
 of it. Happily therefore, and wifely  
 is it fo ordered, that the Morning De-  
 votions of the Church, which are much  
 the longeft, fhould fhare alfo a greater  
 Proportion of the *Harmony* which is fo  
*ufeful* to enliven them.

But its *Ufe* ftops not here, at a bare  
 Removal of fome of the ordinary *Impe-*  
*diments* to Devotion; it fupplies us alfo  
 with fpecial *Helps* and *Advantages* to-  
 wards furthering and improving it. For  
 it adds *Dignity* and *Solemnity* to the  
 publick Worfhip; it fweetly influ-  
 ences and raifes our *Paflions*, while we  
 affift at it; and makes us do our Duty

SERM. with the greatest *Pleasure* and *Chear-*  
 IX. *fulness*; all which are very proper and  
 powerful Means, towards creating in us  
 that holy Attention and Erection of  
 Mind, which I have shewn to be the  
 most reasonable Part of this our reason-  
 able Service.

Such is our Nature, that even the  
 best Things, and most worthy of our  
 Esteem, do not always employ and de-  
 tain our Thoughts, in Proportion to  
 their real Value, unless they be set off  
 and greatened by some outward Cir-  
 cumstances, which are fitted to raise  
 Admiration and Surprize in the Breasts  
 of those who hear; or behold them.  
 And this good Effect is wrought in us  
 by the Power of *Sacred Musick*. To  
*it* we, in good Measure, owe the Dig-  
 nity and Solemnity of our *publick Wor-*  
*ship*; which else, I fear, in its *natural*  
 Simplicity and Plainness, would not so  
 strongly strike, or so deeply affect the  
 Minds, as it ought to do, of the Slug-  
 gish and Inattentive, that is, of the far  
 greatest Part of Mankind. But when  
*Voices*

*Voices and Instruments* are skilfully adapted to it, it appears to us in a majestic Air and Shape, and gives us very awful and reverent Impressions; which, while they are upon us, it is impossible for us not to be fixed and composed to the utmost. We are then in the same State of Mind, that the devout Patriarch was, when he awoke from his holy Dream; and ready with him to say to ourselves: *Surely the Lord is in this Place, and I knew it not. How dreadful is this Place! This is none other but the House of God, and this is the Gate of Heaven.* Gen. xxviii. 17.

Further; the Availableness of Harmony to promote a pious Disposition of Mind will appear, from the great Influence it naturally has on the *Passions*, which, when well directed and rightly applied, are the Wings and Sails of the Mind, that speed its Passage to Perfection, and are of particular and remarkable Use in the Offices of *Devotion*: For *Devotion* consists in an Ascent of the Mind towards God,  
attended



S E R M. attended with holy Breathings of Soul,

IX. and a divine Exercise of all the *Passions*

and *Powers* of the Mind. These *Pas-*

*sions* the Melody of Sounds serves only to guide and elevate towards their proper Object: *These* it *first* calls forth, and encourages, and *then* gradually raises and inflames. This it does to *all* of them, as the *Matter* of the Hymns sung gives an Occasion for the employing them; but the Power of it is chiefly seen in advancing that most heavenly Passion of *Love*, which reigns always in *pious* Breasts, and is the surest and most inseparable Mark of true Devotion; which recommends what we do in Virtue of it to *God*, and makes it relishing to *ourselves*; and without which, all our spiritual Offerings, our Prayers and our Praises, are both insipid and unacceptable. At this our Religion *begins*, and at this it *ends*; it is the sweetest Companion and Improvement of it here upon *Earth*, and the very Earnest and Foretaste of *Heaven*: Of the Pleasures of which nothing

thing further is revealed to us, than that they consist in the Practice of *Holy Musick*, and *Holy Love*; the joint Enjoyment of *which* (we are told) is to be the happy Lot of all pious Souls to endless Ages. And observable therefore it is, that *that Apostle*, in whose Breast this divine Quality seems most to have abounded, has also spoken the most advantageously of *Vocal* and *Instrumental* Harmony, and afforded us the best Argument for the lawful Use of it: For such I account the Description which he has given us of the Devotions of Angels and blessed Spirits, performed by *Harps* and *Hymns* in the *Apocalypse*. A Description which, whether real or metaphorical, yet, belonging to the Evangelical State, certainly implies thus much, that whatever is there said to be made use of, may now, under the Gospel be warrantably and laudably employed.

And in his Steps trod the holy Martyr *Ignatius*, who probably saw Saint *John* in the Flesh, and learnt that  
Lesson

SERM. Lesson of divine Love from him, which

IX. after his Example, he inculcated every  
 where in his *Epistles*; and together  
 with it instils into the Churches he  
 writes to, a Love of *Holy Harmony*, by  
 frequent Allusions and Comparisons  
 drawn from that Science, which recur  
 oftner in his Writings, than in those  
 of any other Ancient whatever, and  
 seem to intimate to us, that the Devotions  
 of the Church were set off with  
 some kind of *Melody*, even in those  
*early Times*, notwithstanding we usually  
 place the Rise of the Institution  
 much lower.

Would we then have *Love* at these  
 Assemblies? Would we have our Spirit  
 softened and enlarged, and made fit  
 for the Illapses of the Divine Spirit?  
 Let us, as often as we can, call in to  
 our Aid the Assistances of *Musick*, to  
 work us up into this *heavenly Temper*.  
 All Selfishness and Narrowness of Mind,  
 all Rancor and Peevishness vanish from  
 the Heart, where the Love of *Divine*  
 Harmony dwells; as the evil Spirit of  
 Saul

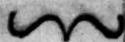


Saul retired before the *Harp of David*. SERM.  
The *Devotional*, as well as the *Active* IX.  
Part of Religion is, (we know) found-  
ed in *good Nature*; and one of the  
best Signs and Causes of good Nature  
is, I am sure, to delight in such *pious*  
Entertainments.

And now it naturally follows from  
hence (which was the *last Advantage*,  
from whence I proposed to recom-  
mend the Use of *Church Musick*) that  
it makes our *Duty* a *Pleasure*, and en-  
ables us, by that Means, to perform  
it, with the utmost Vigour and Chear-  
fulness. It is certain, that the more  
pleasing an Action is to us, the more  
keenly and eagerly are we used to em-  
ploy ourselves in it, the less liable are  
we, while it is going forward, to tire,  
and droop, and be dispirited. So that  
whatever contributes to make our De-  
votion *taking* (within such a Degree as  
not at the same time to dissipate and  
distract it) does, for that very Reason,  
contribute to our Attention and holy  
Warmth of Mind in performing it.  
What

SERM.

IX.



What we take Delight in, we no longer look upon as a Task, but return to always with Desire, dwell upon with Satisfaction, and quit with Uneasiness. And this it was which made holy *David* express himself in so pathetical a Manner concerning the Service of the *Sanctuary*: *As the Hart panteth after the Water-Brooks* (says he) *so panteth my Soul after thee, O God. My Soul is athirst for God, yea even for the living God. When, O when shall I come to appear before the Presence of God?* Which passionate Wish, as it certainly proceeded from the Pleasure he took in reflecting on those holy *Offices*, so, I question not, but a good Part of that Pleasure arose from the sacred *Melody* which accompanied them. For so he himself instructs us to think of him in many other Passages of the *Psalms*; particularly where he breaks out into this pious Exultation: *It is well seen, O my God, how thou goest, how thou my God, and King goest in the Sanctuary: The Singers go before,*  
the

Psal. xliii.

1, 2.

Psal. lxxviii.

24, 25.

*the Minstrels follow after; in the Midst* S E R M.  
*are the Damsels playing with the Tim-* IX.  
*brels. And if the Image of that holy*  
*Quire, now only present to his Memory,*  
 gave him so much Pleasure, what  
 Transports do we think he was under,  
 when he himself *assisted* at the Ser-  
 vice, and his Ears drank in their holy  
 Strains?

And the same may we observe to be  
 the Case, as to some of the *Fathers* of  
 the first Rank, St. *Chrysostom*, St. *Au-*  
*stin*, and St. *Basil*: As *Eloquent* as they  
 naturally were, yet they never appear  
*so* Eloquent, never put on such a Va-  
 riety of Thought and Expression, such  
 an Elevation of Soul and Style, as when  
 they are discoursing of the Energy and  
 Power of *Church Musick*. Could I pro-  
 duce to you the Passages from them  
 to this Purpose at length, you would  
 say, that Men who spake thus feeling-  
 ly, and with so much Extacy, of the  
 holy Hymns and Anthems of the  
 Church, when they were at a *Distance*  
 from them, must have an Heaven al-  
 most



S E R M. most in their Breasts, when they *part*

IX. *took* of them. If *therefore* the Praises  
 of God, tunefully performed, be naturally attended with an holy *Pleasure*, that *Pleasure*, I say, must needs produce *Attention*; actuate all the Springs, and enliven all the Motions of Devout and Heavenly, nay even of Earthly, and Sluggish Minds. The Ancients do sometimes use the Metaphor of an *Army*, when they are speaking of the *joint* Devotions put up to God in the Assembly of his Saints: They say, we there meet together in *Troops* to do Violence to *Heaven*; that we encompass, we besiege the *Throne* of God, and bring such an united Force, as is not to be withstood. And, I suppose, we may as innocently carry on the Metaphor, as they have begun it, and say, that *Church Musick*, when decently ordered, may have as great Uses in *this Army of Supplicants*, as the Sound of the *Trumpet* has among the *Hosts of the mighty Men*! It equally rouses the Courage, equally gives Life, and  
 Vigour,

Vigour, and Resolution, and Unanimity to these *holy Assailants*. SERM.  
IX.

Thus have I shewn you, in how many several Respects *Vocal* and *Instrumental Harmony* may be serviceable to *awaken, fix, and inflame* us in our publick Addresses to God; and how far therefore it recommends itself to the Approbation and Use of all pious *Christians*, upon this single Consideration: So that, though the Worship now under the Gospel be *Spiritual*, yet are we not debarred, on that Account, from employing *several Means* and *Instruments* of Worship, which are *not* so. On the contrary, from the *Spiritual Nature* of our Worship, it follows, that all such *outward* Helps and Expedients may and ought to be laid hold of, as do really assist and promote the *inward* Worship of our Spirits. And for this Reason therefore, among others, the melodious Harmony now practised in *our* Church ought to be continued.

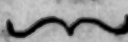
SERM.

IX.

'Till then our Brethren of the *Separation* can prove, either that *Musick* has not that *Influence* on the Mind of Man, as it has been represented to have; or that the Minds of *us Christians* are not so disposed to receive its Impressions, as those of *other Men*; that we have not the *same* Faculties to be wrought upon, the *same* Passions to be regulated, the *same* Dulness and Distraction of Mind to be cured; 'till this can be made out by *them*, they must allow us to retain those *Modes* of Worship, which *We* and our *Forefathers*, from the Infancy of the *Reformation* down to this Day, have practised, to our great Spiritual Comfort: *Modes* of Worship, which *They* perhaps, who stand aloof from them, may think (and call sometimes) *Rudiments of the Law, and weak and beggarly Elements*; but which *We*, by Experience, find and feel to be very strong and powerful *Incentives to Godliness*.

Gal. iv. 9. If *Abuses* now and then creep into *this Part* of our Worship, *They* shall not



not be more ready to point them out, SERM.  
 than *We* will be to own and reform IX.  
 them. If some slight *Inconveniencies*   
 may happen to have arisen from hence,  
 which seem to blemish the Perform-  
 ance of our Religious Service, far be  
 it from us either to cherish, or defend  
 them. The very best Things are liable  
 to be misused; and the better the Thing,  
 oftentimes the more liable it is to it.  
 However we doubt not, but that, up-  
 on a fair Balance of Profit and Loss, it  
 will appear, that the few *Inconveniencies*  
*pretended* to have arisen from hence,  
 are not to be compared with the many  
 and mighty *Advantages*, that have cer-  
 tainly sprung from it; and that if  
*one* good Man has been thrown *back*  
 in his Devotions, *Hundreds and Thou-*  
*sands* have been extremely *forwarded*  
 by it.

And this is what I should now more  
 particularly endeavour to prove under  
 my

*Third* general Head, wherein I pro- III.  
 posed to shew, that the *Way* of per-  
 forming

S E R M. forming divine Service in the *Church*

IX. *of England* is better fitted to fix our *At-*  
*tentions*, and raise our *Affections*, than  
 any *other* Form of Devotions now prac-  
 tised in the *Christian World* \*: That  
 it enjoys this Advantage, as in several  
 other Respects, so particularly in rela-  
 tion to a solemn and decent Use of *Church*  
*Musick*. But the greatest Part of the  
 Matter that would arise on this Head,  
 is foreign to the Design of the Day;  
 and what is not so, has in Part been  
 prevented already; and neither of them  
 can now be insisted upon, without de-  
 priving you too long of a better and  
 more sensible Conviction of the Power  
 of Church Musick, than any I can  
 supply you with. I shall therefore take  
 this whole Point for granted; and from  
 thence, in the

IV. *Fourth* and last Place, very briefly,  
 but earnestly exhort you to make your  
 Devotion *Exemplary* in Proportion to

\* See the preceding Discourse on this Subject.

those

those *Advantages*, which *you* above S E R M.  
all *others* enjoy. In vain will it be for IX.

us to boast, that we have extraordinary Helps to inward Piety, if our outward Behaviour plainly declares, that we do not make a due Use of them. In vain shall we hope to convince those that *differ* from us, of the Decency and Expedience of *this* Part of our Worship, and of its great Tendency to spiritual Edification; if they see that it does not really produce those good Effects in us which we ascribe to it: Let us reason never so well in this Case, they will think they have answered our *Arguments*, if they can but confront them with our *Practices*. Let us take away the Strength of *this* Objection, as well as we can that of all the *rest*; and then, I am sure, our Devotions will be altogether blameless. O let all of us, that have any regard for the Honour of that Church, to which we belong, any Zeal for the true Interests of Piety, any real Concern of Heart on the Account of



SERM. those little Niceties, and endless Scruples

IX. that thus unhappily divide us; O let  
 ~~~~~ all of us, I say, that are thus affected  
 and disposed (as all of us, I am sure,
should be) resolve, from this Moment,
 so to order our external Deportment in
 the House of God, as may best enable
 it to reach those excellent Ends! Let no
 light and vain *Motions*, no loose and
 unseemly *Gestures* be seen upon any of
 us, when we appear in this great Pre-
 sence! Let our Ears then listen to no-
 thing, but to the solemn Offerings of
 Prayer and Praise that are then put up,
 and listen to them with no other Design,
 but to affect our Souls with a deep
 Sense of them. Let not our *Eyes* lead
 the Way to our naughty *Hearts*, and
 teach them to wander! But let us be
 all composed throughout into Attention,
 and awed into a religious Respect and
 Silence.

To the Sound of *Words*, and the
 Significancy of *Gestures*, let us join all
 along the sweet Melody of our *Hearts*;
 completing the holy *Consort*, we assist
 at

at, by a divine *Agreement of Mind* and SERM.
Body in the same Acts of Adoration, IX.
and by making *all* our Worship both
inward and *outward* exactly *harmonious*, and of a Piece! So shall we take
away every Reproach that shall be cast
upon our Communion: So shall we
win the Hearts, and convince the Judg-
ments of those that differ from us: So
shall we thoroughly recommend our
Worship to God, and *ourselves* by the
Means of it. In a Word, so shall we
make the Devotions of this our Church
Militant here on *Earth*, the lively
Image of those of the Church *Tri-*
umphant in *Heaven*.

To a blessed Participation of which,
may God of his infinite Mercy bring
us, &c.

THE
SIN and FOLLY

Of being Anxious about

FUTURE EVENTS.

THE
SIN and POLY

Of being sinners again

FUTURE EVENTS.

Of Anxiety and Solitude.

A

S E R M O N

Preached at

WESTMINSTER Abby,

March 13, 1714-15.

M A T T. vi. 34.

—*Take no Thought for the Morrow.*

THIS is Part of our Saviour's Ser-
mon on the Mount; wherein he
proposed a short Sum of *Christian Doc-*
trine, in Opposition to the false Max-
ims, and corrupt Notions of *Mora-*
lity, that then obtained in the World.
And

S E R M.

x.

SERM. And indeed, all the Precepts he there
 x. laid down, though highly reasonable
 in themselves, were yet so distant from
 the common Opinions and Practice of
 the *Jews*, that we are not to wonder,
 Matt. vii. 28. if (as St. *Matthew* informs us) *when he*
had ended these Sayings, the Multitude
was astonished at his Doctrine: For they
 had heard nothing like it from their
 Teachers, the *Scribes* and *Pharisees*.
 And, perhaps, no one Branch of it
 was more surprizing to that worldly
 minded People, immersed deeply in
 the Cares of Life, and in a restless
 Concern for Earthly Things, than the
 Rule given by him in the Text.—
 Take no Thought for the Morrow. A
 Rule, which even to *Christian* Ears
 may seem somewhat harsh at first Hear-
 ing; and will therefore deserve to be a
 little explained, in order to its becom-
 ing a sure Foundation of *Duty*, and the
 proper Subject of those *Reasonings* and
Exhortations, with which I propose to
 enforce it.

—Take

—Take no Thought for the Morrow. X.

The Meaning of our Saviour in these Words, cannot be, that we are to live at Random, secure and careless of whatever may befall us; that we are not to look into the Consequences of our own, or other Men's Actions, nor endeavour any ways to foresee, and prevent approaching Dangers: That we are to make no manner of Provision for future Events, to lay up nothing, and concern ourselves about nothing, but what is present, and immediately before us: For this is no Part of the Character either of a *Wise* or *Good* Man, nor agreeable to many other Rules and Directions given us in holy Scripture. Doubtless, Sagacity in discerning, and a prudent Forecast towards declining Evils, are not only allowable, but commendable Qualities: Frugality and Diligence are certainly Virtues: And therefore the *prudent Man* is thus described by *Solomon*, that *he foreseeth the Evil, and hideth himself*: 3.

Prov. xxii.

SERM. *himself*: And the Ant is recommended

X. to us, as a Pattern of Providence and
 Prov. vi. 6 *Parfimony; Go to the Ant, thou slug-*
gard, consider her Ways, and be wise.

Even our Saviour had a *Bag*, wherein there was probably a Supply for more than *one* Day. And as he allows us to foresee Persecutions at a Distance, and to escape them by an early Flight; so he himself took that Method of declining them, and cannot therefore be supposed to condemn what he frequently practised. But his Meaning plainly is, to forbid *such* a Care and Concern for future Accidents, as is attended with *Uneasiness, Distrust, and Despondency*; *such* a Degree of *Thoughtfulness*, as takes up, and dejects, and distracts the Mind. We are not too curiously to pry into the remote Issues of Things, nor to perplex and afflict ourselves with the Forethought of imagined Dangers: We are not to guard against Want, by an eager anxious Pursuit of Wealth, nor be so careful in providing Supplies for the Necessities
 of

of *this* Life, as to forget that we are designed for *another*. In *this* Sense we are obliged to take no Thought for the *Morrow*. And indeed this is the Sense which the *Original* naturally carries: For what our Version renders by *taking Thought*, is in the *Greek*, a Word of much greater Force and Compass, signifying a restless Solitude, and Distraction of Thought; and by the *Morrow*, is not meant the *very next* Day only, but, according to the Import of the *Eastern Phrase*, *all* the Time to come, *any* future Event, at what Distance soever. The Design of the Text therefore is, to prohibit all anxious and perplexing Cares; whether as to the good Things of Life, the Necessaries and first Conveniencies of it, how we shall be furnished with them; or, whether as to the *ill* Things, the possible *Dangers*, and distant *Evils* of Life, how we shall bear them: A Disease very incident to good and virtuous Minds, when they happen to be a little tinctured with Melancholy; and
very

SERM.
X.

SERM. very apt, where it gets Possession, to

X. poison all the Enjoyments of Life, and

even to make Life itself sometimes a Burthen to the Owner. It has been known, when an excessive Love of some earthly Good [as perhaps of a near and dear *Relation* or *Friend*] has in tender Tempers raised such a Dread of losing that Happiness, as hath been more than equal to the Pleasure they took in enjoying it. And there have been Instances of those, who, under all the Affluence and Plenty in the World, have fancied to themselves some Accident, that might rob them at once of all they possessed; and have by such an *imaginary* Scene made themselves as truly miserable, as if it were *real*. Nor is it an unusual Thing for Men to be influenced so far, by Reflections on such *possible* Accidents as these, as to shut up their Hands and their Bowels to the Poor, and to think themselves excused from relieving other Men's Wants, lest they themselves should one Day want what they
are

are invited to bestow. However, should S E R M.
some of these be thought *rare Cases*, x.
 yet nothing is more *common*, than to
 see Men, who are at Ease, disquieting
 themselves with remote Prospects, and
 with the vain Fear of future Evils:
 Especially if they live in doubtful and
 distracted Times, when the Spirit of
 Dissension reigns openly, and Parties
 of Men are loud and violent against
 each other: Then they sink under the
 sad View of Things, and are ever
 scaring themselves with the Fore-
 thought of the very worst, that can
 befall Themselves or Others, particu-
 lar Families or Cities, Churches or
 Kingdoms. To *these* (and to all such
 as these) we may presume that our
 Blessed Lord directs the Precept of the
 Text, — *Take no Thought for the
 Morrow.*

It shall be my Business to shew both
 the *Evil*, and the *Unreasonableness* of
 such *Anxious Thoughts*; and how little
 they are to be justified, either in Point
 of *Piety* or *Prudence*.

S E R M. *First, The Evil of them lies in these*
 X. Particulars: That they are opposite to
 several plain *Precepts* of holy Writ;
 That they often *invade* the peculiar
Province and *Prerogative* of God, and
 are always built on a secret *Distrust* of
 his *Providence*.

Several express *Commands* there are
 in Scripture of the same Import with
 that of the Text: *Be careful for no-*
 Phil. iv. 6. *thing* (says St. Paul) *but in every*
Thing, by Prayer and Supplication,
with Thanksgiving, let your Requests
be made known unto God. Cast all
 1 Pet. v. 7. *your Care upon him* (says St. Peter) *for*
he careth for you. Commit thy Way
 Ps. xxxvii. *unto the Lord* (says good David) *trust*
 5. *in him, and he shall bring it to pass.*
 Can a Man transgress these Commands,
 without Guilt; or entertain any De-
 gree of Anxiety, without transgressing
 them?

Indeed, when we indulge ourselves
too far in these melancholy Presages,
 and pretend to see a great way off the
 Evils

Evils that shall happen to us, we are S E R M.
guilty of *Impiety* on another Account; X.

inasmuch as we proudly and arrogantly
pretend to what doth not lie within
the Compass of our Knowledge, and
affect to partake with the Almighty in
one of his great Attributes. *Secret* Deut.

Things belong unto the Lord our God: xxix. 29.

He alone, who orders and disposes
Futurities, can foresee them at a *Di-*
stance: But Man is a short-sighted and
blind Creature; and never more blind,
than when he pretends to see farthest,
and to set up for *Prophecy*. It is
the kind Design of God, to wrap up
Things to come in Clouds and Dark-
ness, lest we should arrive at the
Knowledge of that, which, when
known, would certainly trouble us.
The Scheme of successive Angry Pro-
vidences, by which God *must* govern
a wicked World, would be so terrible
and amazing a Sight, that, in Pity to
us, God has shortened and bounded
our View. And what Madness, what
Wickedness is it then, to pry curiously

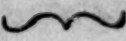
S E R M. into those *Arcana* of Providence, which

x. we can never find out, and which were
 ~~~~~ hidden from us, on purpose that we  
 might not find them out! *Secret Things*  
*belong unto the Lord our God; but*  
*those that are revealed, belong unto us*  
*and to our Children:* And one of these  
 revealed Truths is, the wise Aphorism  
 of the Text, *Take no Thought for the*  
*Morrow.*

That such *Anxiety* is *Irreligious*,  
 will farther appear, if we consider it  
 as built always on a secret *Distrust* of  
 God's *Goodness* towards us, and perpe-  
 tual *Watchfulness* over us. It hath in-  
 deed somewhat of the Nature of *Infir-*  
*delity*; and therefore our Saviour ap-  
 plies himself to those who give way  
 to it, under *this* Compellation: *O ye*  
*of little Faith!* Did we repose an en-  
 tire Confidence in God; were we  
 thoroughly persuaded, that he is as  
 ready, as he is able, to do every Thing  
 that is needful for us, and that, with-  
 out his Permission and Appointment,  
 no Snare can entrap us, no Calamity

can



can crush us, no Evil can approach to SERM.  
hurt us; had we always upon our X.  
Minds, I say, a deep and lively Sense   
of these Truths, it were impossible that  
a Concern for future Events should  
much disquiet us; we should certainly,  
according to the Advice of *St. Peter*,  
*cast our Care upon God*, if we in good  
Earnest believed, that he *cared for us*.  
I do not say, that such a Persuasion  
would render us indifferent to all E-  
vents, and wholly unconcerned at the  
probable Approach of impending Dan-  
gers; but it would in good Measure  
take off the *Edge* and *Sting* of our  
Forebodings; it would compose and  
calm us into a patient Resignation of  
ourselves to the Divine Will and Ap-  
pointment; it would make us hope  
the best, that there is room to hope in  
every Case, and expect the worst that  
could happen with Tranquillity and  
Evenness.

By the Light of Nature we learn,  
God is infinitely wise and good: And  
what greater Security can we have,

S E R M. than to be under the Protection of infinite Wisdom and Goodness? Ought

X.

we in reason to disturb ourselves with an eager Desire of possessing what infinite Goodness shall be pleased to lay upon us? Do we not know, and feel, that we depend upon God, *originally*, for what we *are*, and *every Moment* for his continued Preservation? That in him we *live, move, and have our Being*? And can we doubt, whether he, who gave us the greater Gift, *Being* itself, will afford us the Less, whatever is absolutely requisite to our *Well-being*?

Acts xvii.  
28.

The Argument is our Saviour's —  
Matt. vi. 25. *Take no Thought* (says he) *for your Life, what ye shall eat; nor yet for your Body, what ye shall put on: Is not the Life more than Meat, and the Body than Rayment?*

The same plain Lesson we learn also from the Observation of God's perpetual Care and Providence over the several Ranks of *lower* and *less* noble Creatures; over the *Birds* of the Air, and the *Beasts* of the Field, and the  
very

very *Plants* that flourish on the Face SERM.  
of the Earth. *These all wait upon* X.  
*him, who giveth him their Meat in*  
*due Season.* He feeds them within, Psal. civ.  
and he clothes them without, either 27.  
usefully, or splendidly, as seemeth best  
to him: His overflowing Bounty sup-  
plies them with whatever is suitable to  
their Natures and Wants: *He openeth*  
*his Hands, and filleth all Things living*  
*with Good.* And shall he, who pro-  
vides thus liberally for *inferior* Beings,  
neglect *any Ways* to take care of *Man*,  
the Heir of all his Blessings, and Lord  
of the Creation? Thus hath the same  
divine Preacher, with admirable *Sim-*  
*plicity* and *Force*, argued in the same  
Chapter: *Consider the Fowls of the* Matth. vi.  
*Air* (says he) *for they sow not, neither* 25.  
*do they reap, nor gather into Barns;*  
*yet your heavenly Father feedeth them:*  
*Are ye not much better then they?*  
*And why take ye Thought for Ray-* ver. 28,  
*ment?* *Consider the Lillies of the Field,* 79, 30.  
*how they grow: They toil not, neither*  
*do they spin; and yet I say unto you,*



SERM. that Solomon, in all his Glory, was not  
 x. arrayed like one of these. Wherefore if

~~~~~ God so clothe the Grass of the Field,  
 which To-day is, and To-morrow is cast
 into the Oven, shall he not much more
 clothe you, O ye of little Faith?

But I forbear to enlarge farther on
 this Point, that I may have room for
 those Considerations that belong to my

II. *Second general Head*; under which I
 proposed to shew, that an anxious Con-
 cern for To-morrow, is as destitute
 of all Pretences to *Wisdom* as *Good-*
ness.

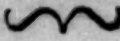
A Censure, that will not easily be
 allowed! since the looking forward to
 the probable Events of Things hath
 been ever esteemed one of the first and
 chiefest Instances of *Prudence*. It hath
 so, and with good Reason; when that
 Sagacity is employed in a proper *Man-*
ner, and within its due *Bounds*; when
 it gives the Mind a calm and clear
 Foresight of the Difficulties it is likely
 to meet with, and leaves it at Liberty,
 under

under that View, to prepare itself every way for the Encounter: But when it serves only to disarm us of our Courage, and to deprive us of our Reason; to create Vexations to us, and to multiply Dangers; it is then the very *Folly of Foolishness*, as may appear from the ensuing Reflections. For,

1. The Task we set ourselves in this Case, is infinite and endless. And after all will not answer the *Design*, for which it is intended. He, who makes uncertain *May-be's* the Object of his Concern, has taken Care to supply his Mind with perpetual Matter of Disquiet; has pitched upon a fruitful Subject of Uneasiness, which can never be exhausted. The possible Evils and Calamities of Life are without Number; and in vain therefore should we attempt to reckon them up: Or, could we number them, it would be a still vainer Attempt, to forecast with ourselves particularly how we might avoid them: Which yet is perhaps the only wise Reason that can be given for

S E R M. for our musing much upon them. Did
 X. the Affairs of this World proceed in an
 even and regular Course, so that we
 might easily trace Effects from their
 Causes, and judge surely of the *future*
 by the *present*; it might be reasona-
 ble and prudent often to employ our
 Thoughts and Concern on Times and
 Things at a Distance, and *endeavour*
 to foresee, what were *possible* to be fore-
 seen, in order to make the wisest Use
 and Advantages of it. But alas! we
 have no sure Clue to guide us in such
 Searches as these: The *Events* of Life
 are to the utmost Degree *uncertain*,
 and depend often on such *secret* Springs
 and Motions, as lie without the Reach
 of our Observation; and therefore fall
 out often so crossly, and so contrary
 to common Rules, that it is but lost
 Labour to draw long Schemes before-
 hand, and form nice Conjectures upon
 them. *I returned and saw under the*
Sun (says a very experienced Ob-
 server) *that the Race is not to the Swift,*
nor the Battle to the Strong, neither
yet

Ecccl. ix.
 11.

yet Riches to Men of Understanding, nor SERM.
yet Favour to Men of Skill; but Time x.
and Chance happeneth to them all. There 

is scarce any Man, perhaps, who is not sensible, that the greatest Turns that have happened to him in his Fortunes, have been owing to such lucky Hits, and to such a Set of conspiring Circumstances, as he could not any ways have foreseen, nor can yet account for: And few there are, I believe, who have not by the same happy Co-incidence of Things, without their Foreknowledge, or Care, escaped great Dangers. And what therefore is so very uncertain, as future Events are, ought not to be the Object of any great Concern or Passion. But were it possible to guess at a remote Event with some Degree of Assurance, yet it is impossible to know, whether we ourselves shall live to see it. It may happen, as we presage: But, e'er it happens, we may be snatched from the World; and that is all one to us, as if it were never to happen at all.

And

SERM. And why then should such a *short-liv'd*
 X. Thing as *Man*, lengthen his Cares to
 no Purpose? Why should a Creature
 of *to day take Thought for the mor-*
row?

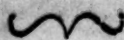
Either the Evil we fear, will come,
 or it will not: If it *will*, then the
 Saying of our Lord takes Place, *suffi-*
cient for the Day (that is, for the
 Day of Visitation) *is the Evil thereof*:
 It is *Time* enough to bear it, when it
doth befall us; but it is unpardonable
 Folly to invite it to *come and torment*
us before our Time; to add *imaginary*
 to *certain* Afflictions, and to suffer a
 Thing a *thousand* Times over in our
 Thoughts, because we must *once* suf-
 fer it in Reality. But if it will *not*
 come, then our *Fear* of it is our only
 Evil: And surely *such* a Fear is *Vanity*
and Vexation of Spirit, in the utmost
 Propriety of the Expression. Anxiety
 of Mind, therefore, makes us feel a
 Thousand Afflictions, which will *ne-*
ver overtake us, and multiplies those
 which certainly will. And how can
 a worse

a worse Character possibly be given of SERM.
any Thing, that sets up for *Prudence*? x.
Nay,

2. It not only multiplies Evils, but takes away from us the Power either to *escape*, or *bear* them; renders us incapable of using those *Methods* of *Prevention*, which are requisite to ward the Blow, or of suffering what we cannot prevent, with Decency and Patience. This is plain, that the worst Thing in the World to advise with, in Case of Dangers, present or future, is a scared Imagination: For that disturbs and disorders a Man's Thoughts to such a Degree, that he cannot calmly consider what is fittest to be done, in order to avoid the Thing he fears; and it deprives him also of that Presence and Firmness of Mind, which should support him under what is unavoidable.

That very Trembling, and Weakness, which proceeds from too quick a Sense of approaching Danger, takes away from a Man the Use of those
Limbs

SERM. *Limbs*, which should help him, either
 x. to grapple with it, or to decline it.



When thou art afflicting thyself therefore, with sad Omens and Presages, and applauding thy own *Wisdom* and *Fore-sight* in so doing, remember the Decision of one, who was certainly *wise*, and who has told thee, *that the Fear of Man bringeth a Snare; but he that trusteth in the Lord, shall be safe.* Again,

Prov.
 xxix. 25.

3. This Concern for *Futurities* robs us of all the Ease and the Advantages, which might arise from a proper and discreet Use of the *present* Moment. Certainly, the greatest Pleasure, on this Side Heaven, lies in an even and serene, a calm, composed, and steady Mind; that is *inwardly* at rest, and, by Consequence, at leisure to enjoy all *outward* Comforts; that hopes the best, and is prepared for the worst; enjoys the Present, and is not anxiously concerned for the Future. Such a Temper of Mind is the greatest Blessing God can bestow upon a Man, because it
 gives

gives the Taste and Relish to all other SERM.
 Blessings; and therefore the greatest x.
 Folly a Man can be guilty of, is, to
 part with it upon any Account, and to
 quit a certain Tranquillity *now*, out of
 the vain Fear of being robbed of it
some time, or other. Further,

4. 'Tis very *unreasonable* to disquiet
 ourselves about *distant* Evils; it often
 happening that the *Presence* of the
 Things themselves, suggests better Ex-
 pedients, wiser and quicker Counsels
 to us, than all our Wisdom and Fore-
 thought at a Distance can do. *The*
Morrow (says our Lord) *shall take*
Thought for the Things of itself; that
 is, it shall bring along with it a Power
 and Strength of Mind answerable to its
 Necessities, a Frame of Spirit every
 Way suited to our Circumstances and
 Occasions. Thus *Sickness* (as *one* well
 observes) “ doth of itself produce in
 “ us such a Temper, as is fitted to that
 “ Trial; it makes us affect Privacy and
 “ Silence, which conduce to our Re-
 “ covery, and gives us such a Serious-
 “ ness

S E R M. " nefs, and Readiness to submit to good
 X. " Advice, as is agreeable to the Dan-
 ~~~~~ " gers that attend it. And thus Ne-  
 " cessity and *Want* infuse into the Soul  
 " that Decency of Behaviour, that  
 " Carefulness to watch proper Oppor-  
 " tunities, that Courtesy and Eloquence  
 " of Speech, which no Premeditation  
 " can furnish, and proves a kind of  
 " Inspiration." Trouble not thyself,  
 therefore, about what is to come: For  
 when it is to come, it shall either *find*,  
 or *make* thee ready to undergo it: *To-  
 morrow shall take Thought for the Things  
 of itself*; and why then shouldst thou  
 be at a *needless* Expence of *Thought be-  
 fore-hand*?

To these several Accounts of the  
*Folly* and *Unreasonableness* of anxious  
 and tormenting Cares, give me Leave  
 to add one more, and I have done.

That, he who indulges them, for-  
 feits his Interest in the *divine Provi-  
 dence and Protection*; and *that* is a  
 Loss, for which all the *Wisdom*, and  
*Skill*, and *Forefight* in the World can  
 make



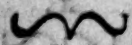
make no Amends. He that terrifies S E R M.  
himself with the Apprehension of *future* x.

Evils, declares in Effect, that he doth  
not absolutely rely upon *God* for his or-  
dering, and disposing them. And he,  
who doth not absolutely trust *God* with  
all his Concerns, has no Right to his  
Protection and Defense, no Reason to  
expect his Support and Assistance; but  
is left to work out every Thing, as well  
as he can, by the Dint of *second* Causes,  
by his own Parts, Policy, and Prudence.  
And how wretched is his Case, who has  
brought his Affairs to that Pass, as to be  
deprived of his best and faithfullest  
Counsellor, his most kind and potent  
Friend, and to *live*, as it were, *with-*  
*out God in the World?* *It is a fearful* Heb. x.  
*Thing to fall into the Hands of the living* 31.

*God*, says the Apostle: And surely,  
*next* to that, it is a fearful Thing to take  
ourselves *out* of his Hands, and to exempt  
ourselves from his Care; which he is  
in good Construction supposed to do,  
who sets himself with any Degree of *So-*  
*licitude to take Thought for the Morrow.*

SERM.

X.



Let all of us, who are convinced of the Reasonableness of these *Speculations*, put them immediately in *Practice*! let us even *To-day*, while it is called *To-day*, throw off all Anxiety and Concern for *To-morrow*! If we heartily believe the Doctrine of divine Providence, let us shew our *Faith* by our *Works*; let us live, as if we *did* believe it; *Industriously* indeed, *warily*, *wisely*; because by *these* Means we are to entitle ourselves to the Protection of God; but withal, *unconcernedly*, *cheerfully*, *resignedly*, as knowing, that we are *secure* of his Protection when we stand in *Need* of it. Let us behave ourselves like dutiful *Children*, under the Guidance of a wise and gracious *Parent*, who, we are satisfied, loves us, and will, as he thinks fit, and sees best, provide for us; and therefore we fall into *all* his *Commands* and *Directions* with an implicit Obedience, and trouble ourselves with nothing farther, but only to do *the Duty* which *he hath appointed us*, in our several Places and

and Stations. *Let us cast all our Care* SERM.  
*upon him, for he careth for us.* X.

Nay, should he at any Time seem  
 to withdraw his Favour and the Light  
 of his Countenance from us; should he  
 bring us into the Pit and the Snare, and  
 lay Trouble upon our Loins, suffer the  
 Malice of our Enemies, or (which is  
 worse) the Treachery of our Friends to  
 prevail against us; let not *this* itself de-  
 ject us, or shake the firm Repose of our  
 Minds; but let us still express ourselves  
 in the same resolved Manner that Job  
 did under his severe Trials: *While I live,* Job. xxvii.  
*will I not remove mine Integrity from me; 5.*  
*though he slay me, yet will I trust in him.*

Let us, even at such a Time, take up  
 Words of holy Assurance, with Ha-  
 bakkuk, and say: *Although the Figtree* Hab. iii.  
*shall not blossom, neither shall Fruit be in* 17, 18.  
*the Vines; the Labour of the Olive shall*  
*fail, and the Field shall yield no Meat;*  
*the Flocks shall be cut off from the Fold;*  
*and there shall be no Herd in the Stalls;*  
*yet will I rejoice in the Lord, I will joy*  
*in the God of my Salvation.*



SERM.

X.

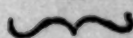
Could we bring ourselves once to this Divine Temper of Soul, could we work ourselves up into this devout Confidence, all the Turns and Vicissitudes of human Affairs, all the Strokes of ill Fortune, which we *feel* or *fear*, would sit light and easy upon our Minds: In the midst of Confusion and Troubles, of Evils imminent, or already come; of real, or fancied Dangers; we might be even and serene; *possessing our Souls in Patience*, and the good Things of Life with *Pleasure*; and enjoying the *present* Moment, without a Mixture of *Fears* and *Disquiets*, arising from near or remote *Possibilities*: Saying, nay singing as the divine *Psalmist* hath taught us, *God is our Hope and Strength, a very present Help in Time of Trouble!* Therefore will we not fear, though the Earth be moved, and though the Hills be carried into the midst of the Sea: Though the Waters thereof rage and swell, and though the Mountains shake at the Tempest of the same! God is our Hope and Strength,

*Of Anxiety and Solitude.*

293

*Strength, a very present Help in Time* SERM.  
*of Trouble.*

X.



To whom, even to the *God and Father of our Life*, the wise Dispenser of Good and Evil, the Governor of Events, and Rock of our Confidence, together with his only begotten *Son*, and ever Blessed *Spirit*, be ascribed *all Glory and Praise, now and for ever!*

---

U 3

T H E

Of the ...  
2000 ...  
2000 ...

...  
...  
...  
...  
...  
...  
...

...  
...  
...  
...

...  
...  
...  
...  
...  
...  
...

U. S. ...  
...



---

THE  
WRETCHEDNESS

Of Living in a  
Wavering State of Mind.

---

WRETCHEDNESS

OR

Wasting State of Mind

---

---

*The Wretchedness of a Wavering Mind:*

---

A  
S E R M O N

Preached at the

**R O L L S** Chapel,

December 4, 1698.

---

GEN. xlix. 4.

*Unstable as Water, thou shalt not excel.*

**T**H E S E are Part of the dying S E R M.  
Patriarch *Jacob's* Words, when XI.  
he blessed the Twelve, *leaning upon*  
*the Top of his Staff.* Of the Eldest of Heb. xi.  
these [*Reuben*] the Character he gives<sup>21.</sup>  
is contained in the Words I have read  
to



SERM. to you; of which there are several

XI. very different Interpretations. I shall

not trouble you with them, but take that, which they do most naturally and obviously bear. And according to that, *Jacob* does in these Words seem to represent *Reuben* to be of a fickle, uncertain, irresolute Temper; not utterly void of all *Propensions* to Goodness, but incapable of *acting up* to them; not without honest and virtuous Resolutions, but unable firmly to keep and practise them. And this being his Case, he pronounces upon him, that he *shall not excel*. That is, that he shall never arrive to any Pitch and *Perfection* in Virtue, nor ever command a *thorough* Esteem and Respect from good Men; that he should never be able eminently to distinguish himself by the Exercise of those good Qualities of Mind, which procure Honour and Happiness to Men in *this* World, and in *another*. — *Unstable as Water, thou shalt not excel*.

From

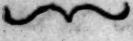
From which Words a natural Occasion will be given me of discoursing to you of the *ill Condition* of that Man, who, like *Reuben* in the Text, being *unstable as Water*, is distracted between two Courses of Life, a *good* and a *bad* one. The *Unhappiness* and *Wretchedness* of which State, after I have set out and proved to you at large, I shall apply myself to persuade the Man that is *thus bewildered*, to retrieve himself by serious Consideration, as soon as he can, and to fix a *sure* Principle of Virtue in his Mind, that may guide and govern him *throughout*, and make him *uniformly* wise and holy.

XI.

Now the Condition of a Man who is divided between two *contrary* Ways of Life, between Virtue and Vice, Godliness and Irreligion, is certainly very wretched and deplorable. For he is in the meanest State of Mind that human Nature is capable of. He is perpetually restless and uneasy; full of Anxiety and Torment. He loses all the Advantages

I.

SERM. vantages of *this* World ; and most as-

XI.  surely forfeits all Pretences to any in the *next*.

1. This doubtful, uncertain Way of Living and Thinking proceeds from a *mean* State of Mind, such as is beneath the Dignity of human Nature.

Man was made to discern and embrace *Truth* ; and, for this Reason, is *there a Spirit in him ; and the Inspiration of the Almighty has given him Understanding*. He has Faculties, whereby he may distinguish between true and false, right and wrong ; and may fix to himself sure Principles of Action. When he *does* this, approves what is best, and sticks to what he approves, he does what he was designed to do, and answers the *End* of his Being. When he does *not*, but suffers himself to be swayed and bent different Ways by different Motives, and to float under Uncertainties, *then* he forfeits the great Prerogative, and the most distinguishing Advantage that belongs to the *reasonable* Nature. The Scripture

Job xxxii.  
8.



ture therefore alloweth not to the Irre-SERM.  
resolute and the Inconstant the Name XI.  
of Men : They are said to be *Children* ~~~~~  
*tossed to and fro with every Wind of Doc-* Eph. iv.  
*trine.* They are in the Weakness and <sup>14</sup>  
Nonage of their Reason, which is as  
yet not improved and ripened into its  
due Strength and Maturity.

The *Perfection* of Man is to be like  
God; for *in his own Image created he* Gen. i. 27.  
*him*; to be like God in *all* his Attributes,  
particularly in that glorious one of his  
*Immutability*; whereby *he is*, as the  
Scripture speaks, *without Variableness*, James i.  
*or Shadow of turning*; *the same Yester-* <sup>17.</sup>  
*day, To-day, and for ever.* Heb. xiii.  
8.

Now this *Immutability* of God is  
twofold, relating either to his *Nature*,  
or his *Purposes*. The *Unchangeable-*  
*ness* of his *Nature* we have no Room  
to imitate: For he designed us for a  
*Changeable* State, made us Creatures  
that were to purify our Natures, and  
exalt them by Degrees; till by his last  
great and glorious *Change* he should  
translate us into an *Immortal* and *Un-*  
*alterable*

SERM. *alterable* State, and make us eternally

XI. the *same* in our Natures, and eternally  
 ~~~~~ happy in the *Exercise* of them. But

his *Moral Immutability*, the Steadiness of his Counsels, Purposes and Actions, we *may* in some Measure, and therefore *must* imitate, as far as Human Frailty will suffer us. We are like him in *this* Perfection, when we get to ourselves, by Thought and Reflection, a firm Persuasion of the eternal Differences of Good and Evil, and of that inseparable Dependance which Reward and Punishment have upon them; and when we govern our Lives under the Sense of these Persuasions, *Evenly* and *Uniformly*. This is truly *Godlike*! the great Improvement, the Honour, and the Excellence of our Natures! And this Perfection he robs himself of, who *wavers* between different Principles and Practices; and is sometimes *good* and sometimes *bad*, as it happens. He puts not his *Faculties* to that *Use*, for which they were given him; employs not his *Reason* to those *Purposes*,
 for

for which it was designed, the establish-
ing and strengthening of his Mind in
moral Principles; but lives as much at
Random, and without Hold, as if *the*
Breath of the Almighty were not in
him.

S E R M.

XI.

Indeed, unless *Reason* gives us a
Firmness and Constancy of acting, it
is so far from being the Glory and the
Privilege, that it is really the Reproach
and Disgrace of our Natures; and
makes us lower than even *the Horse and*
Mule that have no Understanding. For
they, without *that*, act always regularly
and consonantly to themselves, under
the never erring Guidance of *Instinct*;
a *blind*, but *sure* Principle; whilst *Man*,
with all his boasted Titles and Privileges,
wanders about in Uncertainties, does and
undoes; and contradicts himself through-
out all the various Scenes of Thinking
and Living.

Psal. xxxii.
9.

2. But the *Dignity* of our Nature,
is a Consideration capable of touching
but *few*. Let us go on therefore to
more

S E R M. more plain and affecting Considerations.

XI. For such an *unsettled* Temper of Mind
 as we have described, creates a great deal of *Trouble* and *Disturbance* to the Man, who is so unhappy as to be Master of it.

And this follows plainly from what has been discoursed upon the former Head. For whatsoever is *natural*, becoming, and worthy of us, is attended always with *Ease* and *Delight* to the Doer; whereas that which thwarts our *first* End and Design, and is destructive of our *natural* Perfections, must needs be *Pain* and *Grief* to us. For the Truth of which in this particular Case we may appeal to the Feeling of all those, who have ever once made the Experiment. How *uneasy* is that Man always to himself, who acts backwards and forwards, and has no sound Bottom to rest upon. What Disquiets does it create in his Mind, to see himself perpetually condemning himself, allowing himself in that Opinion or Practice *this* Hour, which he is sure
 he

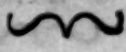
he shall disallow and go against in the S E R M.
next. [And this perhaps is the only XI.
Part of his Temper that he ever can be
sure of.]

Certainly a Mind, thus at odds with itself, cannot but be very troublesome to the Man that has it; unless together with the Power of keeping his Resolutions, he has lost also that of reflecting afterwards on the Breach of them. For whenever he looks back upon his Actions, *Guilt* and *Folly* will appear written, as it were, upon the Front of them: He must needs pronounce himself Light and Inconsistent, Insincere, and Void of that true Fear of God, which dwells only with Simplicity and a single Heart. In fine; so many disagreeable and mortifying Thoughts will offer themselves to him, as cannot but leave a Wound behind them. And a *Spirit thus wounded* (with *Guilt* and *Folly* too) *who can bear?* In Truth, as to *Ease* of Mind, it belongs oftentimes to the *completely* wicked, more than to those who are

SERM. by *halves* so. For the *first* may have

XI. hardened and stupified his Conscience
 so far, till it lets him alone, and gives him no farther Notice of the Dangerousness of the State he is in. But he who Sins and Repents, and then sins again in an endless Circle, is sure to hear of his own Follies, and be sensible of his own Miseries. His *good* Fits are like the short *Intervals* of Madness, which serve only to let the *Madman* into a Knowledge of his own Disease; whereas it would be much more to his Satisfaction and Content, if he were *Mad always*.

Good God! When a Man finds himself breaking through all the strongest Bonds that should hold him; through his most deliberate Resolutions, made in Time of great Danger and Adversity, or upon his solemn Approach to the Table of the Lord, but forgotten again in the Presence of any new Temptation, what Horrors must the Sense of this create in him? What Hatred and Contempt of himself? What

What Despair almost of ever arriving at S E R M.
that Strength and Firmness of Mind, XI.
which is requisite to carry him evenly 
on through the Paths of Virtue? Surely
he is like the troubled Sea, that cannot I sa. lvii.
rest, whose Waters cast up Mire and 20, 21.
Dirt. There is no Peace, saith my God,
to such a wicked one as this.

But further, such a Temper, so distracted between contrary Inclinations and Practices, is in the

3^d Place, mischievous to a Man in Point of *Interest*, as well as *Ease*. For it renders him unfit for all the Affairs and Business of Life; incapable of forming advantageous Designs with Confidence, or of prosecuting them with Effect. *A double minded Man* (saith St. James) Jam. i. 8. is unstable in all his Ways. He that is so in Point of Religion (the greatest and most important Concern of Life, the one Thing necessary) will probably be so in every Thing beside; and then what Kind of Undertaking is such an one qualified for? To what Calling can he betake himself

SERM. with any Probability of Success, who

XI. wants the very first Elements of Thriving, Industry, Constancy, and Perseverance? Alas! the Doubts and Misgivings of his Heart concerning his own internal State are such, as take away from him the Taste of all outward Comforts at present, and hinder him from an effectual Pursuit of them. It must be a *Mind easy and at rest*, that can apply itself thoroughly towards making those Advantages of the Things of this Life, which are innocent and lawful. And *such* an one is not *his*, whose *Ways* (as the Wise Man speaks) *are double before the Lord*. Besides, this Unequalness in acting, these Heats and these Colds in Religion, when once they appear (and how can they chuse but appear some time or other?) will draw upon a Man the Suspicion of Hypocrisy and Dissimulation. He, who in the Eye of the World is sometimes *good*, and sometimes *bad*, as it happens, will be sure to have the Measure of himself taken from the
worst

worst Side of him ; and the other Parts SERM.
of his Character esteemed only as pure XI.
Artifice and Feigning. His Credit will
be blasted, and his good Name be taken
away ; that Engine, by which he is to
profit himself and others, and to do all
the Good he is like to do in the World.
Intimacies and Friendships are the great
Comforts and Supports of Life, and of
these such a Man will be thought in-
capable. What Ground can his *Levity*
give any one to build their *Confidence*
upon? What Encouragement is there to
venture an *Acquaintance* with the Rash
and *Unstable*? What Reason to expect
a *mutual* Consent and Agreement of
Thoughts and Affections, from a Mind
so little *at Unity in itself*.

4. But these are *slight* Inconveni-
ences, in Comparison of what follows ;
that such a *wavering* uncertain Tem-
per of Mind is utterly inconsistent with
the Terms of *Salvation*, and the Hopes
of eternal Happiness. For 'tis not an
Holiness taken up by *Fits* and *Starts*,

SERM. that can carry a Man to Heaven. It

XI. must be a constant regular Principle, influencing us *throughout*, that must do that. *If ye continue in my Word*

John viii.
31.

(says our Saviour) *then are ye my Disciples indeed.* An *uninterrupted* Course of Virtue and Goodness, and nothing less, can justify us before God, and intitle us to our Reward. And the Reason is, because nothing *less* can prove our *Sincerity* to God, which is the great and fundamental Rule, by which we are to be tried. And a Vein of this must run through all our Thoughts and Actions, to make them acceptable before God. *My Son, give me thy Heart*, says God; that is, come to me with a *sincere* and *unfeigned* Design of serving me; surrender up to me *all* thy Inclinations and Affections without Reserve; and give me Possession of thy Soul, without any Rival or Competitor. Which how can *be* said to do, that admits *contrary* Interests perpetually to struggle within him, and in his heartiest *Repentances*

is

is not without some Prospect of *Sinning* S E R M.
 again? Holy *David* therefore makes XI.
Insincerity the Character and Mark 
 of these kind of Men: *Their Heart* Pf. lxxviii.
was not right with God, says he, *nei-* 37.
ther were they stedfast in his Covenant.
 The one follows upon the other; if
 so be that they are not *stedfast*, nei-
 ther can their Hearts be *right with*
God.

Let not a Man therefore flatter him-
 self that Things are well with him,
 because he is not absolutely *given over*
to work Wickedness, but though he
 sometimes seems to be *dead in Tres-* Eph. ii. 1.
passes and Sins, yet he soon *rises a-*
gain by Repentance; for assuredly this
 (which is at the Bottom nothing but
 an Art of getting to Heaven, and yet
 enjoying his Lusts all the while) will
 not serve his Turn. There is no Pro-
 mise in Scripture that belongs to the
unstable and wavering Man; the Terms
 of the Covenant are *universal Purity*;
 or at *least universal Sincerity*: And
 under these, can no Man be saved.

SERM. And as the State of a Man is thus,

XI. with Respect to another World, very dangerous and bad *already*, so is it likely to grow worse and worse *still* without Remedy. For every *new* Return to Sin, every single Desertion of Virtue, does naturally unqualify a Man more and more for a sound Repentance, and weakens all the Motives that lead to it. Sin does by this Means grow familiar to us, and loses its Frightfulness. By our suffering its continual Approaches, it begins to appear to us in a more harmless Shape: We find fewer Horrors about us at the Thought of it, fewer Desires of avoiding it.

Besides, by these *Vicissitudes* of sinning and relapsing, our Resolution at last is quite broken; and we sit down every Time with less Hopes of the Mercy and Forgiveness of God, and of his Grace and Assistance.

Much more might be said, to set out the great *Danger* of such a State, and the Inconsistency of it with the
Terms

Terms of Salvation, if this were not SERM.
too plain a Point to need any farther XI.
Proof ; and therefore I chuse rather
in what remains, to go on, as I pro-
posed, from these several Considera-
tions,

Secondly, To persuade the Man that II.
is thus *bewildered*, to retrieve himself by
serious Consideration, as soon as is pos-
sible ; and to fix a sure Principle of *Vir-*
tue in his Mind, that may guide and
govern him *throughout*, and make him
uniformly wise and holy.

For which Purpose I shall take leave
to recommend two or three *plain*, but
useful Considerations,

I. And *first*, he that sets about this
Work, must be sure that his *Belief* is
right and sound at the Bottom: For
'tis generally the Uncertainty and Wa-
veringness of this, that produces all
that Unevenness, and Disorder in the
Life and Practice of Mankind. A sud-
den Heat of Devotion, or the Fear of
what will become of a Man in the
other

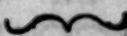
SERM. other World, will carry him sometimes

XI. into mighty Resolutions of quitting Sin, and living well for the future. But these wear off quickly and come to nothing; because they arose only from present Passion, and were not built on any good Foundation, on any strong and full Conviction of the Mind. They

Matt. xiii. 5, 6. *are the Seed which fell upon stony Places, where they had not much Earth; and forthwith they sprang up, because they had no Deepness of Earth: But when the Sun was up (when an hot Temptation presented itself afresh) they were scorched; and because they had no Root, they withered away. Let him therefore, who would pursue this Cure to Purpose, look to himself, lest there be in him an evil Heart of Unbelief. Let him enquire diligently of himself, whereon it is that his Faith stands; how he comes to be persuaded of the Truth of Natural Principles, and of those of Revealed Religion. And let him (if he has it not already) procure to himself such an Evidence of these Things,*

Heb. iii. 12.

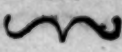
Things, as is not to be shaken. For SERM.
when this Principle is once well fixed XI.

in his Heart, Virtue will go out from 
it into his Life and Actions; and it
will work Wonders towards making
him all Harmonious, and of a Piece.
When he has gone *thus* far, let him,

2. In the next Place, consider well
what that *particular Weight* was, that
in the Days of his *Irresolution* still hung
upon him, and clogged all his virtu-
ous Endeavours. What it was, that,
when his Soul had made some Effort
towards Goodness, overbalanced it
still, and swayed it secretly again to-
wards Nature's Side; For that too is
very often the Case. There is some
particular Sin of our Constitution,
some great and ruling Infirmary, that
damps all our good Motions, and spoils
all our best Resolutions; and will con-
tinue to do so, 'till by a direct Oppo-
sition of ourselves to it, we have con-
quered and removed it. When we
have

S E R M. have cut off *this Right Hand*, plucked
 XI. out *this Right Eye*, sacrificed the dar-
 ~~~~~ ling Lust of our Heart, we may then  
 hope, that the greatest Part of the Dif-  
 ficulty is over, and that no *less powerful*  
 Temptation will be able to draw us a-  
 side. But 'till *this* be done, in vain are  
 all our *other* Attempts and Designs.  
 While *the great Offence* has yet any  
 Hold upon us, nothing will be done to  
 Purpose; but he that *has* been divided  
 in his Opinion, and wavering in his  
 Practice, will be divided and wavering  
*still*.

3. When he has *thus* settled his *Faith*  
 upon good Grounds, and armed him-  
 Heb. xii. self well against *that Sin which does*  
 1. *so easily beset him*, he must take care  
 (in the next Place) not to suffer himself  
 to come within Reach of any Thing  
 that may any ways *unfasten* his Reso-  
 lutions, whilst they are yet young and  
 tender. He must admit of no Debate  
 within him about a *Principle*, but  
 throw off all such Thoughts, as Ene-  
 mies

mies to the Peace of his Mind. He SERM.  
 must listen to no *sceptical* Discourse; XI.  
 no loose Reasonings of carnal Men,   
 such as pervert the Truth. For these  
 are the chief Engines of *Satan* to  
 draw him back again into his former  
 Unsettledness; and his good Purposes  
 may happen to be blasted in the Bud,  
 if they are ventured too soon amongst  
 them. No! No! but let him root and  
 ground himself in the *Faith* first by an  
 answerable Life and Conversation; so  
 shall it happen, that as his good *Prac-*  
*tice* took rise at *first* from his good  
*Opinions*, so shall his *Opinions* be  
 strengthened *afterwards* by his *Prac-*  
*tice*; 'till *both* being *confirmed* in him,  
 shall enable him to *stand in the evil* Eph. vi.  
*Day*, and not to be afraid of what-<sup>13.</sup>  
 ever it is that would shake his *Stedfast-*  
*ness*.

4. If to these *Endeavours* he (lastly)  
 joins fervent and unwearied *Prayer* to  
 Almighty God, for the Aids and Sup-  
 ports of his *Grace*, he shall assuredly  
 from

SERM. from thence be made *perfect* at last, be  
 X. *stablished, strengthened, settled.* He  
 shall have a new Heart created in him,  
 that shall enable him to be *stedfast,*  
 1 Cor. xv. *immoveable, always abounding in the*  
 §8. *Work of the Lord.*

---



---

THE  
D U T Y  
OF  
LIVING PEACEABLY,  
Explained and Recommended.

---

THE  
DUTY

OF THE  
FATHER

*Of Living Peaceably :*

A  
Farewel S E R M O N

Preached at

St. B R I D G E's

December 11, 1698.

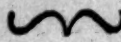
R O M. xii. 18.

*If it be possible, as much as lieth in you,  
live peaceably with all Men.*

T H E R E are many excellent Pre- S E R M.  
cepts and Rules of Duty laid to- XII.  
gether by the *Apostle* toward the End of  
this Chapter ; but none of greater Mo-  
ment to be earnestly inculcated upon  
V O L. IV. Y . *Christians,*



S E R M. *Christians*, and duly observed, than this

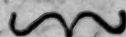
XII. which I have pitched upon for the  
 Subject of my following Discourse.

And I have the rather chose it, at this particular Time, because it is the last Opportunity I shall have of bespeaking you under that *Character*, which I have hitherto borne towards you. And it being likely therefore that the Contest now on foot, may end in the same little Animosities and Misunderstandings, which are usual on such Occasions; I thought I could not do better, than to discourse to you upon a Subject that might be of some Use to temper and allay them; and to dispose you towards such a peaceable State of Mind, as becomes those, who are about to chuse a Minister of the *Gospel of Peace*.

I shall discourse *first* to you of the Argument at *large*, and then apply it to the *particular* Occasion for which I have chosen it. What I have to say on these Words, must naturally fall under these four Heads following:

*First,*

*First*, Here is a *Command* enjoined;  
to live peaceably.



*Secondly*, The utmost *Limits* and II.  
*Extent* of that *Command* are set down;  
we must live peaceably *with all Men*.

*Thirdly*, The great *Difficulty* of so III.  
doing, is allowed and expressed: *If it*  
*be possible*, says *St. Paul*, and *as much*  
*as in you lies*; intimating, that in re-  
spect of some *Tempers*, and in some  
*Circumstances*, it is scarce possible, though  
we do all that in us lies, to effect it.  
To which I shall add in the

*Fourth* and *last* Place, some fami- IV.  
liar *Helps* and *Directions*, that may  
be of Use to assist us towards perform-  
ing it.

As to the *First* of these, the *Pre-* I.  
*cept* here given of *living peaceably*, I  
need not use many Words to tell you  
what it is; it is easily and universally

SERM. understood: Would to God, it were  
 XII. but as universally practised! And then  
 ~~~~~ such Exhortations as these would be  
 needless! But though an Account of
 the *Duty* may not be requisite, to in-
 form even the meanest and most igno-
 rant *Christian*, yet it may be of use to
 bring to his Mind what he already
 knows, and to awaken in him sensible
 and lively Impressions of it: And to
 that End, I shall in a very brief, and
 plain Manner describe it.

To *live peaceably*, is so to demean
 ourselves in all the Offices and Stations
 of Life, as to promote a friendly Under-
 standing and Correspondence among
 those we converse with; so as to pre-
 vent, as much as we can, all *outward*
 Contention and Strife, nay, all *inward*
 Mistakes and Jealousies from arising,
 and to quench and allay them as soon
 as we can, whenever they are risen;
 so, as to disagree *openly* with no Man
 in Things of an *indifferent* Nature, and
 of no Moment; and, where the Point
 is of *Importance* enough to deserve to
 be

be insisted on, there to do it, with so SERM.
much Candor, and Modesty, and XII.
Sweetness, as not to offend even those
we do not agree with. In a Word, it
is so to conduct our Actions, Dis-
courses, and Dealings, as to make our-
selves and others as *easy* as is possible.
Various are the Instances of this Duty ;
some influencing our Behaviour with re-
lation to the *Publick*, some towards
Private Men ; some regarding *Opinions*,
and some regulating our *Practice* ;
some taking Place in Matters of *Civil*
Life, and some in the Concerns of
Religion.

They *live peaceably* with respect to
the *Publick*, who pay a due Regard to
the *Laws* of their Country, and ex-
press a due Reverence towards their
Superiors ; honouring them sincerely,
obeying them submissively ; not rashly
censuring their Actions, but putting the
best and most candid Construction upon
them ; not being over busy in Matters
that are too high for them, and do not
concern them.

SERM. They *live peaceably* in Religious

XII. Matters, who, on the *one* Side, are
contented to enjoy their own Opinions, without arraigning their Superiors in Church and State for being otherwise minded; and without disturbing the publick Peace, in order to propagate their Tenets, and make Profelytes; and who, on the *other* Side, do not by unjustifiable Methods of Severity force Men into the Profession of what they disbelieve; whose Zeal for their Faith never makes them forget their Temper, nor outrun the Bounds of Christian Goodness and Prudence; who make great Allowances for the Weakness of Men's Reason and the Strength of their Prejudices, and condemn not all as insincere, who are not so enlightened as they are; but leave them to stand or fall to their own Master; praying for them in the mean time, that they may come to the Knowledge of the Truth, and endeavouring by all gentle persuasive Methods to reclaim them.

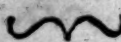
Finally,

Finally, They *live peaceably* in Mat-
 ters of *common* Life and *daily* Practice, who take care to make their Carriage
 inoffensive, obliging; who are not ready
 to entertain ill Reports of Men, much
 less to disperse them; who whisper
 about nothing to set Friends and Neigh-
 bours at Variance; who mind their
 own Business, without intermeddling
 much in the Concerns of others;
 who can take a *slight* Affront or Injury
 in Conversation without resenting it,
 and even a *great* one without returning
 it.

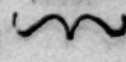
But I forbear to give any further
 Description of so known a Duty; and
 go on to consider in the

Second Place, the Extent of it; it II.
 must be practised towards *all Men*:
 Not only towards those who are in
good Terms with us, but toward those
 who are *not*; not only to the Good-
 natured and Candid, but even to the
 Captious and the Froward. For, as
 our Saviour argues in a like Case, if

S E R M. you live peaceably with *them only*, who

XII. live peaceably with *you*, *what Thank*
 *have you? Do not even Sinners the*

Matt. v. *same?* The Worst, and worst Natured
 46. Men will go thus far: For there is
 no Temptation to break Peace with
 those who live inoffensively with us,
 no room for Contention with the Mild
 and Complying; the Tryal of our
 Temper is, when Shocking Accidents
 happen to us, when Ill Words are
 given us; when we are touched in
 Point of Interest and Honour; or in
 any other respect drawn into a Dis-
 pute, and forced to engage: Then, to
 bear Opposition meekly, to ward off
 the Anger of our Adversaries by a dis-
 creet and dexterous Address; to keep
 ourselves free from the Contagion of
 that Passion and that Resentment which
 reigns in them, or free at least from
 the outward and visible Signs of it,
 this is no *vulgar* Attainment, but a
 very great Pitch of Christian *Perfec-*
tion. And the *Apostle* therefore, at
 the very Time he is giving the *Pre-*
cept,

cept, acknowledges the great Difficulty SERM.
that there is sometimes in obeying it: If XII.
it be possible, says he, and as much as in 
you lies; intimating, as I said, that in
respect of some Natures, and in some
Circumstances, it is scarce possible, tho'
we do whatever in us lies, to come up
to it.

And this is the Third Thing I under- III.
took to explain.

To live peaceably with all Men, in
the strictest Sense of the Words, is a
Thing absolutely impossible, and out
of our Reach; for it depends upon
what we are not Masters of, the Dis-
positions and Passions of other Men.
Let us take what Care we can to pre-
vent Mistakes, they will sometimes a-
rise; let us with never so much Cau-
tion avoid doing Injuries, we cannot
always avoid receiving them; some
churlish and savage Natures there are,
that delight in Outrages, and are mov-
ed with no Condescensions, no Com-
pliances; such Sons of Belial (as was

said 1 Sam.
xxv. 17.

SERM. said of *Nabal*) that a Man cannot speak
 XII. to them. Where violent Encroachments

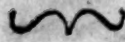
are made upon our *Fortune* or good *Name*, we not only may, but must vindicate ourselves from them, though Breach of Peace, and an open Rupture with any Man attend our doing it. *Slight* Affronts, and *small* Injustices we may put up with; but where we are wounded to the *Quick*, either in our Estate, or Reputation, we are not at *Liberty* to be silent: To be upon our Defence in such Cases, is a Debt we owe to ourselves, our Posterity, our Relations, and Friends, who have all an Interest in us.

When the Cause of true Religion suffers from the Tongues or Pens of Libertines and Unbelievers; when any open Attempts are by ill Men made on the Constitution of that Church or State, whereof we are Members; when an absent Friend is traduced by lying Lips; or the Name of any sincerely good and virtuous Man is vilified; it is our Duty in such Cases
 to

to stand up, and rebuke this Spirit of S E R M.
Treachery, Malice, or Prophaneness. XII.

The Honour of God, or the Interests of Virtue would, at such a Time, be blemished by our Silence and Forbearance: And therefore the Rule of our Saviour here takes Place; *he that is not with us, is against us.* He that doth not openly and heartily espouse the Cause of *Truth*, will be reckoned to have been on the other Side. And then *Peace* with *Men* can never be eligible, when it implies *Enmity* with *God*.

However, in all these Cases, where we lay aside *Peace* for a more valuable End, we are bound to have an Eye to it, even while we seem to overlook it; and must so break with Men on such Occasions, as to leave Room, and to prepare the Way for a Closure. *War* itself has its Rules and Restraints, within which its savage Cruelties are bounded: Much more must the Measures of our Resentment, in such Breaches as these, be tempered
with

S E R M. with great Humanity and great Prudence. We must recover our Right,
XII.  and wipe off Aspersions, without Rancour or Revenge ; we must contend for the Truth of the Gospel itself, so as not to forget the plain Precepts of it ; and for the Glory of God, with such a well regulated Zeal, as does not trample upon any of his Commands : That is, the Warmth of our Concern for the best Doctrines, Persons, or Things, must never so far transport us, as to make us say any Thing of any Man, but what our Cause and his Character will justify ; nor endeavour to inspire People with worse Opinions concerning him, than we in our Consciences believe he deserves. And to preserve ourselves thus far upon our Guard, when we are engaged, is a much harder Task than not to engage at all ; and will require our calling in to our Aid all the pious Helps and Expedients, with which Reason and Religion will furnish

nish us; and which therefore I shall SERM.
now, in the XII.

Fourth and *last* Place, point out to IV.
you.

Many of this Kind there are; but the Time I have already spent, and the Application I am further to make of the Whole, will not suffer me to mention *all*, or to dwell, as much as I ought, even on *those* that I do mention.

I. The Rise of most of our Disquiets and Discords is, from the tumultuous and disorderly Motions of our *Passions*; and these therefore must in the *first* Place be well regulated, especially that fierce and boisterous Passion of *Anger*, which discovers itself the earliest, and is tamed the latest of any; and is, of all others, the greatest Enemy of our Repose. *This* therefore, and the *rest* must be brought under the Discipline and Government of *Reason*, if we ever hope to be easy to ourselves or other Men; and indeed,

SERM. deed, unless we are first easy to ourselves, it is impossible we should ever
 XII. be so to others. We may as well expect perpetual Sun-shine in Climates subject to Storms and Hurricanes, as that there should be a *lasting* Peace in that Breast, where the *Passions* are allowed to reign.

2. The next plain Help towards *living peaceably* is, if we moderate our Desires, and shorten our Designs, with Regard to the good Things of Life, contenting ourselves with such a Share of them, as answers all the good Ends of living, and not eagerly grasping after more, than would be of real Use to us, if we had it: The Wants and Conveniences of *Nature* are known, and certain, and soon supplied; but *imaginary* Wants are infinite and endless; and he that has set his Heart upon them, will find it very difficult ever to recall it. He is got beyond Reason in his Desire, and will probably stick at no unreasonable Method of obtaining it. And the natural Issue
 of

of this must be perpetual Feuds and SERM.
 Bickerings, Contentions and Struggles; XII.
 for *our* Desires will meet those of *other* Men, as eager every whit as
 ours, and as impatient of being re-
 sisted. *From whence come War and*
Fightings? (says St. James.) *Come they*
not hence, even of your Lusts? that
 is, from your covetous Desires; for
 so it follows: *Ye lust, and have not;* James iv.
ye kill, and desire to have, and cannot 1, 2.
obtain.

3. A third Rule, in this Case, is, to
 have a watchful Eye upon ourselves,
 in our first *Entrance* upon any Debate
 or Contest; and at that Time to be
 sure to keep the Reins closely in our
 Hands, *when* there is the most Dan-
 ger in giving a loose to them; and
 they are the most easily manageable.
 For let us but indulge ourselves a lit-
 tle in the first Motions of Warmth and
 Resentment, and by insensible Steps
 and Degrees we may be wrought up
 at last into all the Heighth of Madneſs
 and Folly. *The beginning of Strife* Prov. xvii.
 (saith ¹⁴

SERM. (saith the Wise Man) *is as when one*

XII. *letteth out Water.* When the Bank is
 once broken down, we do not know
 how far it may flow, or how deep a
 Space it may fill.

To this we may add,

4^{thly} A particular Vigilance over our-
 selves, with regard to the Intemperance
 of the *Tongue*, that *Member which*
 James iii. *setteth on Fire the Course of Nature,*
 6. *and is itself set on Fire of Hell.* We
 must restrain it in every Respect, but
 especially in relation to that natural
 Proneness it has towards publishing
 the Faults of others; which ought
 never to be done, but with the utmost
 Caution and Tenderneſs. We can ne-
 ver strictly justify ourselves in speak-
 ing Evil of any Man, though that
 Evil should be true, but when either
 the Seal of Friendship binds up the
 Discourse, or the Rules of Charity
 and Justice require us so to do. The
 Son of *Sirach* seems to carry this Mat-
 ter very far: *Whether it be to Friend*
 Ecclus. *or Foe (says he) talk not of other Men's*
 xix. 8. *Lives,*

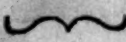
*Lives, and, if thou canst without Of- SERM.
fence, reveal them not; which seems XII.*

to bar us from spreading an ill Report of any Man, but when we are under an absolute *Necessity* of doing it. He that governs himself constantly by *this* Rule, takes one of the surest and most promising *Steps* towards *living peaceably with all Men*: Especially if,

5^{thly} He keeps himself always from embarking in Parties and Factions, and falling in with Vehemence into all the Interests and Designs of them. This will necessarily in Time imbitter his Spirit, and sour his Humour, make him like and dislike Men implicitly, and lead him into many Resentments, which he has nothing to do with.

Again, 6^{thly} Let a Man that desires to pass through this World inoffensively, resolve to be very diligent in his particular *Profession* and *Calling*; and if he has none, to make one to himself, by some proper and

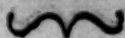
SERM. suitable Employment. He that is em-

XII.  ployed, has no Leisure to move in the little Disputes and Quarrels which trouble the Peace of the World, and which are chiefly kept up and bandied to and fro by those who have nothing else to do: The Apostle therefore (we may observe) in his Exhortation joins *studying to be quiet*, with the *doing our own Business*, as if the one was a natural and inseparable Attendant on the other.

1 Theff.
iv. 11.

Above all, let him add, in the *last* Place, fervent and unwearied *Prayer* to the blessed *Author of Peace*, and *Lover of Concord*, that he would please to vouchsafe him the inestimable Benefits of it, and endue him with the Qualities that promote it, by the powerful Operation of that *Spirit*, whose *Fruits*, *Love*, *Joy*, and *Peace*, are peculiarly said to be; who inhabiteth only with those, who do in some Measure partake of them, and who to those, with whom he inhabits, imparteth

parteth them yet more and more abundantly. SERM.
XII.



Thus have I largely explained to you the Duty of *living peaceably*, and shewn you some of the most effectual Methods of performing it. Would to God all that hear me this Day would resolve to practise this plain, but useful Lesson, as fully as I have handled it, and give a remarkable Instance of their Compliance with the Direction of the Text, in the *Choice* that is now coming before you; wherein, I fear, there will be but too much Occasion given of trying how far these Considerations have had their due Weight with you, and made a deep and becoming Impression upon you.

Seven Years I have from this Place admonished, exhorted, besought you; What Success these Labours of mine have had, He knows best, for whose Glory they were designed. It will be one sure and comfortable Sign to me

S E R M. that they have had *some*, if it shall

XII. appear, that the Words I have spoken
 to you To-day, are not in vain; if
 they shall prevail with you in any
 measure, to avoid those Rocks, which
 are usually split upon in Elections,
 where Multitudes of different Inclina-
 tions, Capacities, and Judgments are
 interested. To which End, let me
 intreat you, that, since in these Cases
 Unanimity, and an entire Agreement
 of Hearts and Voices is not to be ex-
 pected, you would at least take Care
 to disagree, in as decent, and friend-
 ly, and Christian a Manner as is pos-
 sible.

Let not your Zeal for any *one* Man's
 Character ever draw you to load, and
 depreciate, and vilify *another*! Take
 not up slight Reports to Men's Disad-
 vantage, spread them not, encourage
 them not, listen not with Greediness
 to them.

Let it be enough, that the unsuc-
 cessful *lose* what they seek after, an
 Opportunity of exercising among you
 that

that Talent in divine Instructions where- SERM.
 with God has enabled them. Let them XII.
 not *lose* also, as far as in any of you
 lies, their *good Name*, that great En-
 gine of doing good, by which their
 Labours must be made effectual to o-
 ther Persons, in other Places; and
 which as far as any of you shall *endea-*
vour to deprive them of, so far will you
 endeavour to obstruct the Influence of
 their Doctrine, and to make their Cha-
 racter useless.

Remember, I beseech you, that
 your holy Contention is, about *a Mi-*
nister of the Gospel of Christ; carry
 it not on by a Violation of any Rules
 of the Gospel: Those Rules, for the
 Breach of which, if he be a good
 Man (as I question not he will be) he
 will not thank you, nay will be obliged
 by his very Post to reprove you after-
 wards.

I speak not this to accuse any of
 you, as if any of these Methods had
 been already practised; but knowing
 how the *Passions* of Men, not under

SERM. the strong Checks and Restraints of
 XII. *Grace*, are apt to work on these Occa-
 sions, as becomes me, I warn you.

Set an Example to the rest of the
 Parishes of this ample City, in the
 Management of such Elections as these,
 reform the Disorders that (God knows)
 too often attend them. Manifest to
 the World the *Reasonableness* of your
 having an Interest in chusing your
 Preachers, by the fit and laudable
Manner in which you make use of it.
 Be not too stiff and peremptory in
 your Opinions: Let those who are (or
 should be) conscious of their not hav-
 ing all the Advantages requisite to-
 wards determining their Choice in
 these Things, defer somewhat to the
 Judgment of such as are perhaps some-
 what better qualified for it: They must
 judge for themselves indeed, their Souls
 are concerned; but let them judge with
 Humility and Modesty.

Should some little Heats arise, while
 the Dispute lasts, when it is over, I
 am confident they will vanish; and all
 of

of you will join in paying that Person S E R M.
you shall pitch upon, the Esteem due XII.
to his Function, and to his Station 
here; and which, I take this Oppor-
tunity of telling the World, I have
truly received from you.

However, though I have no Reason
in any respect to complain of my En-
tertainment among you, yet nothing
would please me better than to hear
that your Respect and Love was in
every Instance increased towards him
that is to succeed me; because nothing
can be a better Evidence of your *Sin-*
cerity in Religion, and of your *Growth*
in it, than when you grow also in your
sincere *Regards* to those, who in a
particular manner belong both to *that*
and *you*. And it is an infallible Sign,
that the Truths of the Gospel have not
made that Impression upon a Man's
Heart and Conscience which they
ought to do, when the Preachers of
the Gospel have not had that Share in
his Esteem, which belongs to the Use-

S E R M. fulness and Dignity of their sacred Em-
 XII. ployment.

~~~~~ And this I take to be so universal a Rule, as to admit of no Exception; at least, I am sure, I never met with any. And it is therefore my Hope, I say, that you will always shew yourselves to be a religious People, and under the Influence of good Principles, by your Behaviour towards those whose Business it is to *watch over you for good*; which will be one Way, I am sure, of securing to yourselves a Succession of able and worthy Men, as may adorn this Place, equally by their Lives and Doctrines; and be a lasting Honour and Advantage to those who chuse them.

As for *myself*, with how great Imperfection I have performed my Duty here, and how far short I have fallen of the important Trust committed to me, of instructing and guiding you in the Ways of Virtue, no Body can be more sensible of than I am. However, thus much I take leave to say, that in  
*Simpli-*

*Simplicity and godly Sincerity* I have SERM. preached the *Gospel of Christ* among XII. you; directing my Discourses always against those vicious *Principles* and *Practices*, which to me seemed most to prevail; and sparing nothing I observed to be amiss in you, out of Regard to Men's *Persons or Opinions*, or to any worldly Consideration whatever.

The Infidelity of the Age has forced me to dwell often on the great Articles and Mysteries of our Faith, and to explain them largely: But I call God to witness, that I never proposed any Explication of these Points, never recommended any Thing of this Kind to *your* Belief, but what I firmly, and from the Bottom of my Heart *believed myself*. The *Faith* I have delivered to you, the *Faith* of the Church of *England*, into which we are *all* baptized, is, I am intirely satisfied, the same that *was once delivered to the Saints*: I hope none of you will be ever invited, by the specious Arts and  
Infi-



SER M. Insinuations of *Heresy*, to depart from

XII. it. I am sure the Profession of it in  
 all its Branches and Members, is what,  
 by the Grace of God, *I intend to live*  
*and to die in.*

The *Church* you are of, is without doubt, the purest and soundest, the most reasonable and moderate Church upon Earth; the nearest to the primitive Pattern of any, and the most serviceable to our Improvement in Virtue and Godliness: Reverence her, I beseech you, in proportion to her Worth; quit not her Communion for any Boasts to more *pure* and *spiritual* Worship; nor for the Amusements of a more *glorious* and *splendid* one; for the Pretences of those Men who make *Reason* their *God*, without taking in *Revelation* for their *Guide*; or for the extravagant Follies and Freaks of *Enthusiasm*.

As a Sign of your unfeigned Respect for her Constitution, resort often to her Service, and let your outward Behaviour there speak your inward Devotion;

tion; frequent her Sacraments; listen SERM.  
to her Instructions from the Pulpit; XII.  
breed up your Children in the Know-  
ledge of her Articles of Religion; season them early with a due Value for her Doctrine and Discipline; and satisfy yourselves, that this is one of the best Legacies you can leave them.

This is what I have always inculcated to you, and, had the Providence of God continued me longer among you, should have gone on to inculcate still. I can only hereafter wish it, and pray for it, which I shall not fail to perform.

Indeed my particular Employment here now ceases, but my *Relation* to you, I trust, never shall; I shall always cherish the *Memory* of it, and reflect gratefully upon it, reckoning myself *yours* in some measure, even after my ministerial Office here is at an End, and being ready to serve any, even the meanest of you, in all the Christian Duties and Services of which I am capable.

*And*

SERM. *And now, Brethren, I commend you*

XII. *to God, and to the Word of his Grace,*  
 AAs xx. *which is able to build you up, and to*  
 32. *give you an Inheritance among them that*  
*are sanctified. And may the God of*

*Peace (that Peace, to the Practice of*  
*which I have now been exhorting and*  
*persuading you) may the God of Peace,*  
 Heb. xiii. *who brought again from the Dead our*  
 20. *Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the*  
*Sheep, through the Blood of the ever-*  
*lasting Covenant, make you perfect in*  
*every good Work to do his Will; work-*  
*ing in you that which is well pleasing*  
*in his Sight, through Jesus Christ, to*  
*whom be Glory for ever and ever,*  
*Amen.*



F I N I S.



---

BOOKS printed for C. DAVIS,  
against Gray's Inn, Holborn.

I. SERMONS upon several practical Subjects, by the late Reverend *Edward Littleton*, LL. D. in two Volumes, 8vo.

II. Twelve Sermons preached on several Occasions, by the Reverend *William Lupton*, D. D. late Prebend of *Durham*, and Preacher to the Honourable Society of *Lincoln's Inn*.

III. Fourteen Sermons, preached on several Occasions, by *William Reeves*, M. A. late Vicar of *St. Mary's* in *Reading*.

IV. Sermons preached at *St. James's Church* in *Westminster*, on several Occasions, by the Right Reverend Father in God *Charles Hickman*, Lord Bishop of *Londonderry*. Two Volumes, 8vo.

V. *Speétacle de la Nature*, or Nature displayed, being Discourses on such Particulars of natural History as were thought most proper to excite the Curiosity and form the Minds of Youth. Illustrated with Copper Plates, translated from the Original *French* by the late *Samuel Humphreys*, Esq; In Four Volumes, 12mo.

VI. The same Book printed on a large Letter, in four Volumes; 8vo.

VII. The Characters and Properties of true Charity displayed, translated from the Original *French*: Recommended by the Author of *Speétacle de la Nature*, 8vo.

VIII.

*BOOKS printed for C. DAVIS.*

VIII. An Enquiry into the natural Right of Mankind to debate freely concerning Religion; wherein the Maxims advanced by several late Writers on this Subject are examined. By a Gentleman of *Lincoln's Inn*. 8vo.

IX. A Vindication of the Government, Doctrine and Worship of the Church of *England*, established in the Reign of Queen *Elizabeth*, against the injurious Reflections of Mr. *Neale*, in his late History of the Puritans. Together with a Detection of many false Quotations and Mistakes in that Performance. By the Right Reverend Father in God *Isaac* Lord Bishop of *Worcester*. 8vo.

X. Critical Notes on the Old Testament; wherein the present *Hebrew* Text is explained, and in many Places amended from the ancient Versions, more particularly from that of the *LXXII*, drawn up in the Order the several Books were written, or may most conveniently be read: To which is prefixed a large Introduction, adjusting the Authority of the *Masoretic* Bible, and vindicating it from the Objections of Mr. *Whiston* and the Author of the *Grounds and Reasons* of the Christian Religion. By the late learned *William Wall*, D. D. Author of the *History of Infant Baptism*. 8vo.

XI. The genuine Epistles of the Apostolical Fathers, *St. Barnabas*, *St. Ignatius*, *St. Clement* and *St. Polycarp*, the Shepherd of *Hermas* and the Martyrdoms of *St. Ignatius* and *St. Polycarp*. Written by those who were present at their Sufferings; being together, with the holy Scriptures of the New Testament, a compleat Collection of the most primitive Antiquity for above a hundred and fifty Years after *Christ*. Translated  
and

*BOOKS printed for C. DAVIS.*

and published with a large preliminary Discourse relating to the several Treatises here put together, by the most Rev. Father in God *William*, late Lord Archbishop of *Canterbury*, 8vo.

XII. The Life of the Rev. Dr. *John Barwick*, sometime Fellow of *St. John's College*, *Cambridge*, successively Dean of *Durham* and *St. Paul's*; written by his Brother Dr. *Peter Barwick*, Physician in Ordinary to King *Charles II.* with Notes to illustrate the History, and a brief Account of the Author: To which are added, An Appendix of Letters from King *Charles I.* in his Confinement, and King *Charles II.* and the Earl of *Clarendon* in their Exile; and other Papers relating to the History of that Time: Publish'd from the Originals in *St. John's College Library*. 8vo.

XIII. The History of *Charles XII.* King of *Sweden*, by *M. De Voltaire*.

XIV. Letters concerning the *English Nation*, by *M. De Voltaire*, 12mo.

XV. A short critical Review of the Political Life of *Oliver Cromwell*, by a Gentleman of the *Middle Temple*, 12mo.

XVI. Reflections on the Causes of the Grandeur and Declension of the *Romans*, by the Author of the *Persian Letters*, 12mo.

XVII. Pithy, pleasaunt, and profitable Works of Mr. *Skelton*, Poete Laureate to King *Henry the Eighth*, 12mo.

XVIII. The Figure of the Earth, determined from Observations, made by Order of the *French King*, at the *Polar Circle*, by Messieurs *De Maupertuis*, *Camus*, *Clairaut*, *Le Monier*, Members of the Royal Academy of Sciences, the Abbé *Outhier*, Correspondent of the Academy, and *M. Celsius*,



BOOKS printed for C. DAVIS.

*Celsius*, Professor of Astronomy at *Upsal*, translated from the *French*, 8vo.

XIX. Philosophical Conversations, or a New System of Physics, by way of Dialogue, with eighty-nine Copper-plates: Written in *French* by Father *Regnault* of the Society of *Jesus*, translated into *English*, and illustrated with Notes, by *Thomas Dale*, M. D. 3 Vols, 8vo.

XX. An Enquiry into the State of the Ancient Measures, the *Attick*, the *Roman*, and especially the *Jewish*: With an Appendix, concerning our old *English* Money, and Measures of *Content*, by the late learned Bishop *Hooper*, 8vo.

XXI. Fables in *English* and *French* Verse, translated from the original *Latin* of GABRIEL FAERNO, with 100 Copper-plates, curiously engraved by *Du Bosc*, 8vo.

XXII. An History of the Mitred Parliamentary Abbies, and conventual Cathedral Churches, by *Browne Willis*, Esq; 2 Vols, 8vo.

XXIII. The *Iliad* of *Homer*, translated from the *Greek* into Blank Verse by Mr. *Ozell*, Mr. *Broom*, and Mr. *Oldisworth*: To which are added a Preface, the Life of *Homer*, and Notes by *Madam Dacier*, illustrated with Copper-plates, 5 Vols, 12mo.

XXIV. Miscellaneous Observations upon the Classick Authors, &c. by some of the most learned Gentlemen of both Universities, 2 Vols, 8vo.

XXV. Fifty-two Practical Discourses on several Subjects, six of which were never before published. By *Richard Fiddes*, D. D. Folio.

XXVI. *Athenæ Oxonienses*. An exact History of all the Writers and Bishops who have had their Education in the ancient and famous University of *Oxford*, by *Anthony Wood*, M. A. 2 Vols, Fol.



1890

1. The first of these is the fact that the  
2. second is the fact that the  
3. third is the fact that the  
4. fourth is the fact that the  
5. fifth is the fact that the  
6. sixth is the fact that the  
7. seventh is the fact that the  
8. eighth is the fact that the  
9. ninth is the fact that the  
10. tenth is the fact that the

*[The page contains extremely faint, illegible text.]*

